DOCUMENT RESUME

ED 180 608 PS 011 085

TITLE	The Father's Role in Family Systems: An Annotated Bibliography.
INSTITUTION	Wisconsin Univ., Madison. School of Family Resources and Consumer Sciences.
PUB DATE	Jun 79
NOTE	246p.
EDRS PRICE	MF01/PC10 Plus Postage.
DESCRIPTORS	Annotated Bibliographies; Biology; Birth; Blacks; *Family (Sociological Unit); *Fathers; Gifted; One Parent Family; *Parent Child Relationship; *Parent Influence; *Parent Role; Pregnancy; Research Methodology; Role Perception; Sex Role; Teenagers
IDENTIFIERS	*Business Executives

ABSTRACT

This bibliography contains more than 400 annotated references on the topic of the father's role in family systems. In addition to the standard bibliographic citation, each entry includes an annotation which summarizes, discusses, or evaluates the item. The annotations range in length from a few sentences to several paragraphs. An alpha-numeric code also accompanies each citation and is used to indicate the nature of the item (e.g., empirical) and the topic area (e.g. children's perceptions of fathers) to which it pertains. Citations are arranged in five sections. Section I features references on father-child interaction and the father and child development; it includes sub-sections on sex role socialization, gifted/talented children, and general literature. Section II contains references related to the fathering experience and the father role, with sub-sections on the biological and physiological aspects, the expectant father, the teenage father/unwed father, the black father, the single father, and the changing father role. Citations in Section III deal with father absence and are organized into sub-sections on physical absence, psychological absence, and the remaining female parent. Section IV contains references on general family theory and Section V on methodology. (JMB)

****
* Reproductions supplied by EDRS are the best that can be made *
* from the original document. *
****

ED180608

U S DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH,
EDUCATION & WELFARE
NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF
EDUCATION

THIS DOCUMENT HAS BEEN REPRODUCED EXACTLY AS RECEIVED FROM THE PERSON OR ORGANIZATION ORIGINATING IT. POINTS OF VIEW OR OPINIONS STATED DO NOT NECESSARILY REPRESENT OFFICIAL NATIONAL INSTITUTE OF EDUCATION POSITION OR POLICY

THE FATHER'S ROLE IN FAMILY SYSTEMS:

An Annotated Bibliography

BY U.W. SEMINAR STUDENTS

under supervision of Pauline Boss

"PERMISSION TO REPRODUCE THIS MATERIAL HAS BEEN GRANTED BY

Pauline Boss

TO THE EDUCATIONAL RESOURCES INFORMATION CENTER (ERIC)."

Child and Family Studies Program Area

School of Family Resources & Consumer Sciences

University of Wisconsin—Madison

JUNE 1979

PS011085

PREFACE

In the spring of 1977, I taught a seminar on Father Interaction in the Family System, mostly because I was interested in reviewing the growing body of literature on that topic. To my pleasant surprise, the seminar filled quickly with graduate students from a wide variety of disciplines who were equally interested in the topic. We began a semester of intensive, in-depth literature review. Because there were students from child development, family studies, sociology, counseling and guidance, nursing, social work, and behavioral disabilities, an exceptionally wide variety of literature was searched. Both health and social sciences were represented in the areas of research, theory, as well as application (see Coding pp. iii).

The result is this annotated bibliography. It represents a composite of work by individual students, students who exhibited more enthusiasm and interest than I ever could have imagined possible. Their diligence in library search and their intellectual capabilities in summarizing, discussing, and evaluating what they found are reflected in this bibliography. I am pleased that their efforts can now be shared with others.

My appreciation is expressed to these people who made this sharing possible:

* To Dean Elizabeth Simpson, School of Family Resources and Consumer Sciences, University of Wisconsin-Madison, whose interest and support made publication possible;

* To Michael Lamb who, when the seminar began, was still on our campus and gave us much encouragement;

* To Elizabeth Socha and Sally Weiler for their special editing;

* To Jane Haverkate Weier for typing the entire manuscript with a skill and interest that was always beyond what was technically required;

* And above all, to the seminar students who indeed demonstrated a strong interest in father interaction in family systems.

May you find this bibliography useful in your work. I hope you agree that it represents a class project that deserves being shared.

Pauline Grossenbacher Boss
University of Wisconsin-Madison
June 1979

THE FATHER'S ROLE IN FAMILY SYSTEMS:

An Annotated Bibliography

Table of Contents

I. The Father and Child Development/Father-Child Interaction

A. General (Mary Ellen Carne, Gary Price)

1. Childhood (Jaipaul Roopnarine, Gary Price) 1
2. Adult (Patricia Bragstad) 7

B. Sex-Role Socialization (Susan Bronson, Ruth Gardner) . . . 15

C. Gifted/Talented (Elizabeth Socha, Steven Peltier, Joel Skolnick) 38

II. The Fathering Experience/The Father Role

A. Biological and Physiological Aspects (Linda Buchholz, Carrol Kuhlow, Jacqueline Ventura, Mildred Cranley) . 46

B. Expectant Fathers (Mary Steil) 52

C. Teenage Fathers/Unwed Fathers (Kathleen Schulte, Janet Priefer) 64

D. Black Fathers (Mary McCabe, Glenn Olsen) 78

E. Single Fathers (Karin Junkerman, Pamela Gilman) 109

F. The Changing Father Role (Rebecca Reed, Deborah Henderson, Mary Ellen Carne, Connie Wilsnack) 126

III. Father Absence

A. Physically Absent (Colleen Bell, Vincent Fish, Alexi Schauer, Joel Skolnick) 157

B. Psychologically Absent 210

C. Remaining Female Parent (Barbara Bromley) 219

IV. General Family Theory (Jacqueline Ventura, Mildred Cranley) . 230

V. Methodology (cross-listing by sections) 239

CODING

Codes for the letters and numbers alongside citations:

E = Empirical

T = Theoretical

C = Clinical

Ed = Educational

P = Popular

A = Applied

1 = General Literature

2 = Books and Chapters (of books)

3 = International

4 = The Expectant Father

5 = Father's Attitude Toward the Role of Father and Toward His Children

6 = Children's Perceptions of Fathers

7 = The Father in Relation to His Family: The Father Compared to the Mother

8 = Sex Roles and Sex Identity of Children: Impact of Father

9 = The Father and His Daughter

10 = The Father and His Son

11 = Identification and Interaction: Father and Child

12 = The Father and Discipline

13 = The Father and Developmental Difficulties of Children (physical and mental)

14 = The Emotional and Mental Health of Children and Fathers

15 = Fathers and Deviant Children

16 = The Father and His Work Role

17 = The Fathers' Educational and Occupational Achievement: Impact on Children

18 = The Father in Relation to the Academic and Occupational Achievement and Aspirations of Children

19 = Minority Fathers

20 = The Absent Father: Impact on the Child

21 = Fathers Alone and Single Fathers

22 = The Father in Applied Programs

23 = Popular Literature Related to Fathers

24 = Methodology (used in research in fatherhood)

I. THE FATHER AND CHILD-DEVELOPMENT/FATHER-CHILD INTERACTION

A. GENERAL

1. CHILDHOOD

(Roopnarine)

(Price)

5,7 Aldous, J. The search for alternatives: Parental behaviors and children's original problem solutions. Journal of Marriage and Family, 1975, 37, 711-722.

This study is based on interaction of parent-child triads in situations where the child is searching for novel situations to problem tasks. Originality refers to relative novelty of the child's productions in particular situations. 647 third graders with intact families and IQ's above 108 were selected at random. While they performed the four tasks with their parents present, they were observed. It was found that there was an inverse relation between the constraints parents placed on the children and their (the child's) originality. Low originality children received greater amounts of positive affect from their mothers. Dad's display of positive affect was not related to varying degrees or originality.

5,7 Burlingham, D. The preoedipal infant-father relationship. The psychoanalytic study of the child. Vol. 28. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1973. Pp. 23-49.

This author states that in her practice, she has noted that fathers are more active and have more fun physical play with their children than do the mothers.

She speaks to the fathers' fantasies between impregnation and birth, the father who "mothers" the child, first feeling of contact, and stimulation and enjoyment. Father preference and negative reactions to fathers are also discussed.

As is usual with psychoanalytic practice, this article deals with short case histories. She has used no formal method of inquiry; only generalizations of her experiences with father-child relationships.

5,7 Cohen, L. J., & Campos, J. J. Father, mother, and stranger as elicitors of attachment behaviors in infancy. Developmental Psychology, 1974, 10(1), 146-154.

Fathers were compared with mothers and strangers as elicitors of attachment on proximity-seeking behavior, distress vocalization and stranger eye contact from a "secure base". It was found that infants of 10, 13, and 16 months of age approached and sought proximity to the mother significantly more often than they did to the father. Infants also engaged in significantly more eye contact when in proximity to the mother as compared with father. Fathers however were superior to strangers as elicitors of attachment behavior. There was no difference in distress vocalization to the mothers as opposed to fathers in the separation situation.

5 Kotelchuck, M., Zelazo, P. R., Kagan, J., & Spelke, E. Infant reactions to parental separations when left with familiar and unfamiliar adults. The Journal of Genetic Psychology, 1975, 126, 255-266.

In two experiments father-infant relationship was assessed by observing infants' reactions to a series of separations from their parents and an adult stranger. It was found that separation protest was more related to the presence of a strange individual in the laboratory room than to the temporary absence of a specific parent. Infants protested to the departures of fathers and mothers equivocally.

5,7 Lamb, M. E. The one-year-old's interaction with its parents. Paper presented to the meeting of the Eastern Psychological Association, New York, 1976.

The findings presented were based on the second stage of a longitudinal study focused on the development of infant relationships with their mothers and fathers. Ten male and ten female infants from lower-middle to upper-middle class families were observed interacting with their parents and a visitor at home in two 100-minute sessions. Findings revealed a consistent display of attachment behaviors to both parents over the visitor but there was no significant preference in attachment behaviors displayed for either parent. Further, fathers' play with the infants involved more physical and stimulating activities whereas mothers engaged in more toy oriented play, encompassing only brief periods of direct stimulation. The data reported no social class or sex differences. Lamb's findings shed light on the father-infant attachment relationship.

5,7 Lamb, M. E. Effects of stress and cohort on mother-and-father-infant interaction. Developmental Psychology, 1976, 12.

Twenty 18-month-old infants were observed interacting with their parents in a laboratory situation. In the initial episodes, infants directed more affiliative behaviors (smile, vocalization, etc.) to fathers than to mothers. When the infants were observed with a single parent there was more parent-child interaction directed to that parent as opposed to when both parents were present. However, the entrance of a stranger induced more proximity-seeking behavior to the mother over the father.

5 Lamb, M. E. Fathers: Forgotten contributors to child development. Human Development, 1975, 18, 245-266.

A review of the research literature on the role of the father in child development is provided. Analysis indicates that little is known about father-infant interaction and its subsequent influence on socio-personality development. Most theoretical approaches have either ignored the father as assuming a significant role in child development or viewed him as contributing minimally or indirectly to social development. This belief however is not substantiated by sound research findings. A new hypothesis is presented whereby fathers are seen as playing a vital role in social development, but one that is different from that assumed by the mother. Finally,

several research designs are suggested to examine father-infant interaction and its importance to social development.

5,7 Lamb, M. E. Interaction between eight-month-olds and their fathers and mothers. In M. E. Lamb (Ed.), The role of the father in child development, New York: Wiley, 1976.

This study investigated the nature of mother-infant and father-infant attachments in 8-month-old infants. Each infant was observed at home interacting with both parents and a visitor. The data revealed that both parents were "preferred" over the visitor. Fathers were preferred to mothers over all measures but this preference was due to more distal social interaction with the fathers. In specific attachment behaviors there was no preference for either parent.

The findings suggest that infants relate to their mothers primarily as attachment figures whereas fathers are not only attachment figures but elicitors of more distal affiliative behaviors as well.

24 Lytton, H. Observation studies of parent-child interaction: A methodological review. Child Development, 1971, 42, 651-684.

A methodological review of parent-child interaction studies. "The issues discussed include: control of stimuli, recording behavior, conceptualization of summary variables, range and type of behavior sampled, acceptability of observation to parents, reliability and validity of data . . . Improvements in experimental design are noted and suggestions are made for the future."

A very helpful article for those interested in conducting future or analyzing past, father-child observational studies.

5,7 Marcus, R. E. The child as elicitor of parental sanctions for independent and dependent behavior: A simulation of parent-child interaction. Developmental Psychology, 1975, 11, 443-452.

Sixty-four parents were shown videotapes of boys and girls exhibiting dependent and independent behaviors. After each vignette, they were asked what they would do or say to the child being viewed.

Dependent behavior in the children caused more directiveness and greater encouragement of dependence whereas independent behaviors elicited nondirectiveness and encouragement of independence from the parents. Mothers were found to encourage dependency more than fathers when children were dependent, but were more sensitive to the change in behaviors. That is, the fathers remained more consistent in their replies to the children regardless of the behaviors.

The obvious criticism is that the children were not the children of these parents, therefore their responses may not be that which they would make if in the true situation. They were also on the spot to react or speak in this false situation which would have altered what would have been their true response.

5,7 Pederson, F. A., & Robson, K. S. Father participation in infancy. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1969, 39, 466-472.

Using 45 middle-class families with first born infants, tested at 8 and 9 months of age, Pederson and Robson attempt to describe some aspects of father-infant relationships, their range and variation. Pederson and Robson admit from the onset that the major flaw of this study is their neglect to interview the fathers. All information was collected from questioning the mothers.

There were positive correlations between (1) authoritarian control and separation protest; (2) stimulation level of play and baby's differential responding (preference) to male and female adults; (3) authoritarian control and frequency of sleep problems for girls only. Fathers were more apprehensive about the well being of girl infants than their mothers.

The authors conclude that the study's contribution to theory is substantiating the significance of the father-child relationship. They also stress the need for direct observational studies.

5,14 Radin, N. Father-child interaction and the intellectual functioning of four-year-old boys. Developmental Psychology, 1972, 6, 353-361.

This report examines an observational study of 21 (lower class) and 21 (middle class) boys and their fathers. All subjects were four years old at the time. The observations were done in the homes to determine the relationship between paternal child-rearing practices, sex role preferences, and intellectual functioning in youngsters.

The cognitive abilities of the children were measured by: Stanford Binet IQ Test, Peabody Picture Vocabulary Test, and the Brown's It Scale.

They found that 1/3 of the variance in the boys' IQ was accounted for by paternal nurturance or restrictive behaviors. Nurturance was positively correlated with the Stanford Binet scores, whereas restrictiveness was negatively correlated with the scores.

They found that middle class fathers interacted more and were more nurturant with their sons than were the lower class fathers. The hypothesis that a male sex role preference is correlated with paternal nurturance was not supported. Neither was the hypothesis that a male sex role preference is correlated with IQ.

5,14 Radin, N. Observed paternal behaviors as antecedents of intellectual functioning in young boys. Developmental Psychology, 1973, 8, 369-376.

Continuation of the above study with 30 of the original 42 boys. Class division remained half and half, and a Pearson product moment correlation was done to determine that this group was representative of the original population. Besides the original IQ tests done (Stanford Binet, Peabody Picture Vocabulary test, and Brown's It), the Cognitive Home Environment test was administered.

Fathers' nurturance was positively correlated with IQ, whereas his restrictiveness was negatively correlated with IQ. These findings were significant for the middle class group but not so for the lower class group. The higher the father expected the child's grades to be, the lower scores the child would be likely to have.

5 Rebelsky, F., & Hanks, C. Fathers' verbal interaction with infants in the first three months of life. Child Development, 1971, 42, 63-68.

Report of a study done on 10 full term (normal) white babies. From 2 weeks of age and every two weeks thereafter, until 3 months of age, the children wore microphones which taped all verbal communication. The researchers measured fathers' verbal interaction with the babies.

By the 8-12 week period, seven out of ten fathers were interacting less than in the first weeks of the baby's life. Fifty-four percent of their interactions took place during care-taking.

By 12 weeks, fathers of boys vocalized more to their infants than fathers of girls, whereas mothers at this time vocalized more to their daughters. Mean number of interactions was 2.7 per day, while average time spent per interaction was 37.7 seconds.

Major criticism of this study is the lack of information regarding the average mothers' interaction. Babies at this age sleep a great deal of the day and night. It would be interesting to know the percentage each parent interacted with the child each day.

5,14 Rutherford, E., & Mussen, P. Generosity in nursery school boys. Child Development, 1968, 39, 755-765.

In this study, seven middle-class nursery schools were used to randomly select 63 four-year-old boys in order to study generosity in relationship to father nurturance.

Each boy was observed during structured doll play, during simulated competition, tested on moral behavior, and rated by their teacher for generosity behavior. Each boy rated his perception of his fathers' nurturance behaviors.

Generous boys viewed their fathers as being nurturant. They were not as competitive and showed less dependency in their stories. Their teachers, rated them as more kindly, less competitive, more cooperative, less aggressive-and-quarrelsome.

There is data regarding validity of these measures, however, the doll play and competitive play were not discussed in terms of validity and reliability.

5 Spelke, E., Zelazo, P., Kagan, J., & Kotelchuck, M. Father interaction and separation protest. Developmental Psychology, 1973, 9(1), 83-90.

The researchers studied 36 first born children at age 11-1/2 and 12 months. Parental interviews were conducted between the two visits.

During the first visit each subject was exposed to three different procedures designed to measure reactions to unexpected visual discrepancy.

The observation included father, mother, stranger, and child in a 39-minute procedure which was composed of 13 episodes. Each episode varied the persons who stayed in the room with the child. Parents were directed to read a magazine and interact minimally with the child unless he/she was distressed. The entire observation was video-taped.

They found a "lack of differential protest to mother and father departures could be interpreted as indicating an equally strong attachment to both parents". High father interaction children, when alone with the stranger showed little crying, fretting, or disruption of play in comparison to low interaction children.

Infants who cried the most when alone with the stranger were less attentive to the transformation and return trials of the light episodes than children who cried minimally.

"In sum, protest to parental departure seems to be less clearly related to intensity of emotional attachment to a parent than to the child's level of cognitive development, experience with parental departures in the home setting and perhaps a temperament attribute."

5,7 Willemson, E., Flaherty, D., Heaton, C., & Ritchey, G. Attachment behavior of one-year-olds as a function of mother vs. father, sex of child session, and toys. Genetic Psychology Monographs, 1974, 90, 305-324.

Twenty-four one-year-olds were observed in two structured play sessions; one with the mother and stranger, the other with the father and stranger. The toy sets (one interesting and the other non-interesting) were varied systematically.

Absence of sex differences was noted, as well as a near absence of differences in the behaviors of either sex when they are with their fathers and when they are with their mothers. They found slightly more attachment behavior when the "less interesting" toy set was present. There was also an inverse relationship between attachment behavior and exploratory behavior for girls only.

This study did not observe the child's behavior in presence of both parents. This factor is an important one to consider in studying the attachment-separation behavior of the child. However, they conclude that attachment behavior is probably "more a function of situational variables than it is evidence for a focused, specific bond with the mother."

T-E 11 2 Atchley, R. C. Primary relationships: Family, friends, and neighbors. In R. C. Atchley (Ed.), The social forces in later life: An introduction to social gerontology. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth Publishing Co., 1972. Pp. 291-326.

This chapter in Atchley's book skims over such topics as the older couple's relationship, widows and widowers, older sexuality, the role of an older parent, the grand-parent role, the sibling role and the dynamics and functions of families. Of most relevance to the present study is the material dealing with the older parent role. Atchley presents statistics concerning the older parent's relationship with his children and then proceeds to consider role reversal theory. The contention is made that there cannot be any happy role reversals between the generations because the mores do not sanction it and because parents and children resent it. Atchley also discusses the dread older parents, particularly fathers, have of becoming dependent on their children. The obstacles to relationship which cause this dread are discussed.

Atchley's writing style is to combine the theoretical with information drawn from empirical studies. This chapter provides both a good overview of older people's primary relationships and a good discussion of some of the variables relevant to the relationship of older fathers and their children.

E 11 Axelson, L. J. Personal adjustment in the postparental period. Marriage and Family Living, February 1960, 22, 66-70.

Axelson investigated parent's personal adjustment in the postparental period by mailing questionnaires to parents who had had a child of less than 25 years of age marry between two specified dates in two specific communities. One longitudinal technique Axelson used was to have parents think back to the time their child was in high school and to note if any changes have taken place since then. Fathers indicated significant changes in the areas of decreased concern for child's welfare, decreased financial worries, increased activities with their wife, increased satisfaction with marital adjustment and increased interest in occupation have occurred since the time the child was in high school.

The major weaknesses in Axelson's methodology are experimental mortality and a selection bias. Experimental mortality became a factor firstly when researchers were unable to contact all parents who met the sample criteria and secondly, when only slightly over half of the parents contacted returned the questionnaire. A selection bias is present because rather than having the sample chosen in a random way, experimental mortality became the manner by which the sample was selected from the total eligible population.

T-C 11 Blenkner, M. Social work and family relationships in later life with some thoughts on filial maturity. In E. Shanas & G. F. Streib (Eds.), Social structure and the family. New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1965. Pp. 46-59.

Blenkner observes that in the past, social workers have tended

to think it is always good to free the adult child from the parental tie and from guilt. Blenkner disagrees with these traditional notions, stating that rather than dissolving the parental tie completely, it is necessary to help the child complete his emancipation from his parents so that he can more freely help them. All guilt is not neurotic, according to Blenkner, but can serve a positive social and psychological function by motivating an individual to make positive changes that benefit him and others.

Role reversal theory is described by Blenkner as not a normal but a pathological development. While the filial crisis does mark the end of childhood, this does not necessarily mean that the child becomes a parent to this parent. Blenkner's conception of a healthy resolution of the filial crisis is leaving behind the rebellion and emancipation of adolescence and early adulthood, and turning to the parent in a new role, as a mature adult, with a new understanding of the parent as an individual with his own rights, needs, and limitations.

This article presents an excellent discussion of some of the issues and theories surrounding parent-adult child relationships and presents suggestions for clinicians who are dealing with clients who are struggling with their relationship to their parents.

T-C 11 Cavan, R. Family tensions between the old and the middle-aged. Marriage and Family Living, November 1956, 18, 323-327.

Cavan's central contributions to a better understanding of father-child relationships are her conceptualizations of polarities and of social changes which create intergenerational conflict. Cavan states that adult children and their parents have mixed feelings about each other. The adult children may feel rejecting of their parents and yet at the same time feel a sense of duty to their parents and feel guilty if parents are placed in a nursing home. Parents tend to want independence and resent interference from their children and yet they complain of neglect and want their children's love.

Cavan identifies several social changes which in her opinion create strain between the generations. The rural to urban transition is a social change resulting from the children's move to the city where they adopt urban values and life styles; which can cause conflict with parents who remained in the rural setting. Or the socialization of foreign-born children to the American culture. So cultural conflicts may arise. Or upward social mobility, which may mean affiliating more with the class one wishes to enter and breaking off ties with the class one wishes to leave behind, and parents most often represent the class one leaves behind.

Cavan's article is very helpful in identifying struggles which may arise within and between fathers and their adult children. Her theories are useful for the clinician who is trying to discover some of the social roots of father-adult child conflict. These theories would also be interesting to pursue in an empirical way.

T-C 11 Cavan, R. The later years of married life. In R. Cavan (Ed.), The American family. New York: Thomas Y. Crowell, Company, 1963. Pp. 481-507.

Cavan presents some of her theories about fathers and their relationships with their adult children in her chapter which deals with the postparental couple. Working fathers have their work as an outlet for personal satisfaction. If his children are failures, the working father may feel his share in their failure less, because he can turn to his work for success. If his wife is more involved in childrearing than he is, the father may also be less likely than she to attribute the children's shortcomings to failure to be a good parent. Also, if the wife is the more active parent, the father may be less affected by children leaving the home since he is not as dependent on them for status as his wife is.

Cavan's theories are very useful because they provide the researcher with hypotheses to test and the clinician with fresh insights that may help him to understand his clients better.

E 11 Deutscher, I. Socialization for postparental life. In R. Cavan (Ed.), Marriage and family in the modern world. New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1962. Pp. 370-382.

Deutscher interviewed 49 urban, middle-class spouses to test his hypothesis that parents would feel distressed and somewhat desolate when their children leave home. Instead, Deutscher found little of the anticipated feeling of isolation. Parents seemed to accept the departure of their children with calmness. Deutscher explains this finding by stating that the parents may have been socialized for their postparental life so that it did not come as a surprise to them. This socialization may have been aided by the parents' acceptance of change as the natural course of life and by their experiences with temporary departures of children. Deutscher also suggests that in families where the father has been psychologically absent during the years the children are growing up, this role may help the father prepare for the time when his children leave home by providing him with some continuity in role.

Deutscher gathered his data from a biased sample of urban middle-class postparental spouses. This factor hinders the generalizability of his data. Deutscher does, however, present a very worthwhile theory of socialization and adds it to the literature on father-adult child relations.

T-C 11 Duvall, E. Families as launching centers. In E. Duvall (Ed.), Family development. New York: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1967. Pp. 335-388.

In her chapter, Duvall describes the family developmental tasks at the launching center stage as well as describing her model of married living. The basic idea presented by her model is that in order to establish a strong family unit, we must realign our loyalties to the place where our family comes before either your or mine. If forces pulling me or us toward loyalties to "my" home are too strong, then the development of "our" common sense of identity is delayed or weakened.

Duvall's model is a useful conceptualization of where some of the stress and conflict may develop in the relationship of father to adult child. As such, it is a useful contribution on both a clinical and a theoretical basis.

T-C 11 2 Duvall, E. Families in the middle years. In E. Duvall (Ed.), Family development. New York: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1967. Pp. 389-434.

In this chapter, Duvall discusses at length the developmental tasks of the wife and mother and the husband and father during the middle years. Duvall states that the father's task in relation to his children is to set young adult children free and help them become happy and responsible adults. The father accomplishes this goal by doing such things as getting along with grown children as friendly equals, encouraging adult children to make their own life choices and expecting adult children to desire and need autonomy, privacy, and freedom.

While Duvall indicates in her writing her bias towards a traditional definition of sex roles, her writing is still useful in identifying the tasks faced by fathers of adult children. Her developmental conceptualization can be used by clinicians and by those who are seeking for a broader theoretical background.

P-T 11 Le Shan, E. The wonderful crisis of middle age. New York: David McKay Company, Inc., 1973.

Le Shan shares her own experiences and feelings about middle-age and parenting in general. In Chapter 4, however, she describes the conversations that she has had with middle-aged men during which she found that most middle-aged men did not want to think about middle-age and most felt that the best of life was over. Le Shan observes that middle-aged men tend to have only superficial relationships with other men which keeps them emotionally isolated from their comrades. The middle-aged men who seemed to be most optimistic and comfortable about getting older were those men who had developed their talents slowly and steadily, without peaking early. Le Shan contrasts today's middle-aged man with his son's generation, saying that the former grew up with more rigid sex-role expectations and less encouragement to express emotions.

The limitation of Le Shan's book is that her observations are based on information gleaned from a biased sample of middle-aged men. Thus, one cannot say that the views expressed in her book are representative of the middle-aged population at large. The strength of Le Shan's book lies in the wealth of theories it provides for better understanding middle-age and middle-aged men. Le Shan's observations can also serve as hypotheses for future research. The goal of Le Shan's book seems to be to shed some light into a span of life which has long been ignored and this she does in an insightful and provocative way.

T-C 11 Nimkoff, M. F. Changing family relationships of older people in the United States during the last fifty years. In C. Tibbitts & W. Donahue (Eds), Social and psychological aspects of aging. New York: Columbia Press,

1962. Pp. 405-414.

Nimkoff's chapter provides a broad historical overview of the family relationships of older people which includes discussion of the marital relationship, the relationship of the aged and their children and grandchildren and the relationship of the aged and their siblings and other relatives. Nimkoff points out that one historical change is that now married children seldom live with their parents, whereas they often did in 1900. The result of this change is that in marriage, the marital component has expanded and the parental component has shrunk. Nimkoff reports that older people more often live with a daughter than a son. Or to state it in another way, if it is the woman who manages the home, then the older person finds it safer to be dependent on a daughter than on a daughter-in-law. Nimkoff states that grandparents have the reputation of being more permissive with their grandchildren than past generations reportedly were. Nimkoff attributes this change in permissiveness to the grandparents' decline in status within the family.

Nimkoff provides some interesting theories for the researcher or the clinician. Many links and contrasts are made with earlier generations and this provides a good historical context for the father-adult child relationship.

F 11 2 Shanas, E., Townsend, P., Wedderburn, D., Friis, H., Milhoj, P., & Stehouwer, J. Old people in three industrial societies. New York: Atherton Press, 1968.

Chapter 7 (The Household and Family Relations of Old People) and Chapter 8 (The Family and Social Class) have particular relevance for father-adult child relationships. Chapter 7 deals extensively with research concerning the organization of the extended family, the structural integration of the extended family and the influence of age, sex, and physical capacity on the family relations of older people. The researchers interviewed older people in Denmark, England, and the U.S. and found that in all three countries about equal proportions of elderly men and women seemed to be integrated into a modified extended family. Also, there were only small differences between the living arrangements of older men and older women and in the proportions of older men and women who has experienced recent contacts with children or other relatives.

Chapter 8 investigates how the social class of an older person influences his interaction with his family. Shanas and Associates found that middle class, white collar fathers in England and the U.S. were more likely than working class fathers to have only a few children and to live at a greater distance from their children. The white collar father was also more likely than his blue collar counterpart to see his children infrequently of not at all. In the case of

white collar parents, patterns of help in old age flowed most often from parents to children whereas in the case of blue collar parents, help flowed from children to parents.

Shanas and Associates seem to have carefully designed their cross-cultural study and to have used good methodology for the most part. However, the use of occupation as an index of social class may provide only a rough indicator of social class and the practice of classifying married women and widows by the occupation of their husband is questionable, considering the increasing numbers of women in the work force.

E #11 Streib, G. F. Family patterns in retirement. Journal of Social Issues, 1958, 24, 46-60.

Streib sent questionnaires to a group of men 69 and 70 years old to find out what parental norms and interactional patterns exist with their adult children. In exploring achievement norms, Streib found that the fathers overwhelmingly supported their child's going to college rather than taking a good job and also expressed the view that children's increased opportunity is more important than having the children live nearby. When children's success was measured, it was found that where all the children have been more successful than their father, they are more likely to keep in close touch with parents and form a close family. The majority of the fathers stated that it is much more important for the children to maintain affectional and social ties than to help them materially. When father's family assistance norms were contrasted with the children's actual behavior, Streib found that in financial assistance, children meet their father's expectations. In terms of social and affectional contacts, however, children didn't quite meet their father's expectations.

Experimental mortality is a problem for Streib's study. His sample is comprised of retired men from a longitudinal study which has suffered from experimental mortality. Another problem is the uncontrolled extraneous variables resulting from Streib's use of self-administered questionnaires. Despite what Streib's study lacks in generalizability, however, it is useful in providing base line data to be tested by future researchers.

E #11 Streib, G. F. Intergenerational relations: Perspectives of the two generations on the older parent. Journal of Marriage and the Family, (November) 1965, 27, 469-476.

Streib sought to investigate intergenerational relations by having retired fathers and their adult children complete a questionnaire. Streib found that more fathers rated the father-child relationship as very close than did the children. Children expressed feeling closer to their own children than to their parents. In terms of contact, more fathers than children indicated that they wanted to have more father-child contact than they have now. Assistance patterns tended to be symmetrical between the generations, except for financial assistance which tended to flow from father to child.

In this study, Streib chose to sacrifice rigorous control over extraneous variables for the breadth of data gained through self-administered questionnaires. Another weakness of this study is that of experimental mortality. Streib used men in his sample who were from a longitudinal study started five years prior to his study. Streib reports that there was an average 20% yearly loss in the respondent population during the first four years, so that means that during the fifth year, he was dealing with a very select sample. Despite its weaknesses, however, Streib's research can be noted for its attempt to use adult children as subjects and to contrast the views of the two generations.

E #11 Sussman, M. B. Activity patterns of post-parental couples and their relationship to family continuity. Marriage and Family Living, November 1955, 17, 338-341.

Sussman sought to test the hypothesis that when children leave home, parents will feel the need for increased social contacts and activities to fill the void created by their children's departure. After interviewing families who were launching children from the home, he found that women felt the need for increased activity more than men did. Also, if children stayed in close proximity to the parents, then parents seemed to have little need for activity substitutes to replace extended family functions. Sussman concludes that it is necessary to evaluate launching couples' need for increased activity on an individual basis, as some may need more activity and some may not.

The major weakness in Sussman's study lies in his sample. He interviewed 103 launching families who were middle class, white, Protestant, and judged to be "well-adjusted". These selection biases lessen both the internal and external validity of Sussman's study.

T-C #11 Turner, J. Patterns of intergenerational exchange: A developmental approach. International Journal of Aging and Human Development, 1975, 6, 111-115.

Turner reviews current theoretical literature concerning intergenerational contacts. He discusses theories dealing with family structure and function, parental and filial dependency and ingrained family rituals. The models Turner describes that are of particular interest are those dealing with parental and filial dependency. Turner states that the degree of power possessed by the adult generation varies depending on his resources and the dependency needs of other generations. A. L. Rautman presents the idea that an older person's accepting help from his children requires some ability to reverse roles. A. I. Goldfarb, in contrast, thinks that this situation is not a role-reversal but rather a new and clear opportunity for the older person to express his dependency needs.

Turner's article is a good source for finding brief synopses of a number of theories dealing with the topics listed above. In his discussion of these theories, Turner contrasts differing theories about the same topic so that the reader gains an overview of diverse theories. Turner's article is also well-organized and well-documented.

E #11 Watson, J. A., & Kivett, V. R. Influences on the life satisfaction of older fathers. The Family Coordinator, October 1976, 25, 482-488.

Watson and Kivett's article begins with a discussion of research that has examined the patterns of interaction between older parents and their children. The conclusions of empirical studies examining family living arrangements, help patterns and the grandparent role are presented. Research studies are discussed which indicate the importance of life satisfaction in later life. This discussion of other studies serves as a context for the Watson-Kivett study which examines the factors associated with older fathers' life satisfaction. Watson and Kivett interviewed older fathers from rural and urban areas and found that social class and health were the two factors which most influenced father's life satisfaction. Thus, factors directly associated with fatherhood such as number of children and frequency of visits with children, were not the most influential variables.

This article provides a good summary of research dealing with older parents and their children. However, while Watson and Kivett's research study provides some interesting conclusions, these conclusions need to be pursued and studied in future research. Watson and Kivett use the number of living children and the frequency of visits with children as indicators of the importance of the father-child relationship and it seems that these variables need to be verified by future research before Watson and Kivett can say they measured what they set out to measure.

L
25
8,24 Bem, S. L. The measurement of psychological androgyny. Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 1974, 42(2), 155-167.

This article describes in detail the development of the Bem Sex-Role Inventory (BSRI), a new sex-role measure that treats masculinity and femininity as independent dimensions. The BSRI asks each person to indicate on a 7-point scale how well each of 60 personality characteristics, including masculine, feminine, and neutral adjectives, describe him/herself. Each person receives a masculine, a feminine, and an androgyny score.

Masculine sex-role represents the endorsement of masculine attributes and the simultaneous rejection of feminine attributes. Feminine sex-role indicates the acceptance of the feminine and rejection of the masculine attributes. Androgyny indicates equal endorsement of both. These scores are based on the differences between the endorsement of personality characteristics identified as masculine or feminine in relation to sex-typed standards of desirable behavior. The social desirability scale included in the BSRI reflects the degree to which a person describes him/herself in a socially desirable direction on items that are neutral with regards to sex appropriateness. Normative data for the scale along with statistical analyses are presented.

The major findings reveal: (a) the dimensions of masculinity and femininity are statistically as well as logically independent; (b) the concept of psychological androgyny is a reliable one; (c) highly sex-typed scores do not reveal a tendency to respond in a socially appropriate direction but a tendency to describe oneself in accordance with sex-typed standards of desirable behavior for men and women.

Bem concludes the article by encouraging other investigators to consider the notion of psychological health in terms of the role flexibility exhibited by the androgynous person.

E,P
25
8 Bem, S. L. Androgyny vs. the tight little lives of fluffy women and chesty men. Psychology Today, September 1975, 9(4), 58-62.

Written for a popular magazine, this article contains a summary of the development of the Bem Sex Role Inventory and the research on the relationship of sex-role identity and sex-typed behavior described in the two previous articles.

E
25 Bem, S. L. Probing the promise of androgyny. In A. Kaplan & J. Bean (Eds.) Beyond sex-role stereotypes: Readings toward a psychology of androgyny. Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1976.

After arguing that sex-role preferences should not be related to a concept of healthy personality, Bem moves on to a discussion of sex-role identity. Asserting that femininity and masculinity complement each other; she states that it is possible for a person to encompass positive aspects of both. Moreover, a person who has a range of both types of behavior included in his/her repertoire is in a position to be a more adaptive, effective, healthily functioning human being. Finally, a healthy sense of maleness or femaleness is possible only when the artificial parameters of gender are eliminated and one is free to be the unique blend of temperament and behavior one chooses.

With this ideal of androgyny in mind, Bem developed the Bem Sex-Role Inventory (BSRI), a paper and pencil instrument designed to distinguish between androgynous and sex-typed individuals. Validity and reliability information is included in the article.

To summarize Bem's results, the behavior of the androgynous males crossed both the expressive and instrumental domains.

Findings with respect to women in the study are a bit more complicated. Androgynous women, like their male counterparts, fared well in demonstrating both expressive and instrumental behaviors. Surprisingly, masculine women functioned effectively in all domains including the emotional. The feminine women did not function well in cross-sexed behavior.

Ed,P 2 Biller, H., & Meredith, D. Father power. New York: David McKay Co., 1974.

This book is a guide written for those who desire a professional's practical advice on how to be an effective father. The book focuses on aspects of fatherhood such as preparing to become a father and the special problems of divorced and single fathers and stepfathers, dimensions of fatherhood not often addressed in more conventional handbooks for parents.

Although this book comes out with a personally pleasing viewpoint on how fathers should raise their offspring (through an "open-minded use of the natural influence of the father to help the child fulfill his or her goals"), it seems that the "advice aspect" of this book lacks an open-ended quality which might allow fathers to probe personal values about fatherhood and proceed in their individual ways. For example, a blatant statement such as "Don't be too non-demanding..." doesn't really facilitate a father's understanding of why he might be too non-demanding and what personal alternatives he might have for his behavior.

E 8 Block, J. H. Another look at the sex differentiation in the socialization behaviors of mothers and father. Psychology of women: Future directions of research. New York: Psychology Dimensions, Inc., in press.

The author first critically addresses the collation by Maccoby and Jacklin (1974 b, this bibliography), and then presents a study of her own in which she attempts to deal with the criticisms she has raised.

Maccoby and Jacklin (1974) concluded, on the basis of their review of the literature, that socialization cannot adequately explain the apparent differences between the sexes. Block reasons that this conclusion is fourfold: (1) the inconsistent findings may have resulted from the heterogeneity of studies grouped under one of the 11 rubrics. That is, they combined results of studies which were actually incomparable; (2) Developmental trends are unexplored, as is parental socialization of children over age 5. This omission could be critical; it is possible that parents do not begin socialization of current gender behavior in earnest till the child approaches puberty.

(3) The death of direct data on the father (as opposed to inferences from mother and child reports) considerably weakens any assertion made about his contribution to the child's psychosexual development. (4) Maccoby and Jacklin combined studies with little regard for statistical power or experimental worth. It is the author's position that if these four errors were controlled for, Maccoby and Jacklin would have found sharper results.

Block's study consisted of administering the Block Child-rearing Practices Report (CRPR) to an international sample. Subjects included fathers and mothers, and also college students (the latter answered an alternate form concerning their parents' child-rearing practices). Her results replicate some standard findings on the differential socialization practices of mothers and fathers, and present some new possibilities for research.

The criticisms raised by Block are important, and apply to research in general on psychosexual development. The suggestions made by her own research call for behavioral-observational replication.

E 7,8 Bronfenbrenner, U. Some familial antecedents of responsibility and leadership in adolescents. In L. Petrullo & B. M. Bass (Eds.), Studies in leadership. New York: Holt, 1960.

In this study, the author used as his subjects 192 adolescents (10th graders), chosen equally from four socio-economic levels and an equal number of each sex. The measures used were A Parent Activities Inventory (listing dimensions of parent-child relations derived from Parsons' instrumental-expressive dichotomy) which was administered to each subject; also, teachers' ratings of the subject's responsibility and leadership.

The results of the study showed that girls received more affection, attention, and praise than boys, especially from fathers. Boys received more pressure and discipline, especially from fathers. Throughout all socio-economic groups, the father's techniques were similar. However, the mother's techniques varied with social class, becoming more domineering, materialistic, and rejecting with lower socio-economic levels. In lower socio-economic level families, mothers were much more influential and fathers less so. In boys, high responsibility was correlated with greater presence, nurturance, affection, and companionship, especially from the mother, and with greater discipline and authority from the father. These relationships were reversed for girls.

The results of this study which concern the father are especially interesting in that they tend to confirm the hypothesis derived from a Parsonian framework for the family in which the father is seen as the instrumental leader, while the mother is the expressive leader. It follows from this framework that the father should be the parent most concerned with socializing his offspring into "appropriate" sex roles since he is supposedly his family's most important link with the "outside world". Therefore, it seems logical that fathers would tend to vary their behavior with their offspring as a function of their sex more than mothers; some outcomes of this study document such a proposal.

T 11 Bronfenbrenner, U. Freudian theories of identification and their derivitives. Child Development, 1960, 30, 15-40.

This is a review of literature on the theories of identification which the author states he found necessary to make before embarking on a program of research on parental roles and personality development. One outcome of the review is an illumination of the fact that current theory in this sphere is derived almost exclusively from Freud. However, later developments and changes of theory by Freud himself as well as by contemporary authors have added much confusion to the task of defining terminology. The same terms are often used by different writers to refer to basically different concepts. In addition to dealing with Freud's extensive discussion of the topic, this review also includes criticisms and modifications of Freud's identification theory by psychologists and sociologists such as Stoke, Mowrer, Sanford, Sears, and Parsons.

The conclusion of this review doesn't attempt to synthesize the varied ideas that have come out of the survey. Rather, an effort is made to distinguish between concepts so that empirical can be done in this area. Bronfenbrenner especially emphasizes the importance of separating three broad classes of phenomena that have been applied to the concept of identification. These are: identification as behavior; identification as motive; identification as process. The ending note of this article concerns the opinion that theories have grown all out of proportion to the facts in this area; that at this point in time very little is known about what phenomena do in fact exist in the parent-child relationship.

A,E 11 Emmerich, W. Parental identification in young children. Genetic Psychological Monograph, 1959, 60, 257-308.

Using a sample of "only children" in nursery school, Emmerich designed a study to test the hypothesis that the child would be more likely to identify with attitudes associated with the same-sexed parent's role than those associated with the opposite-sexed parent's role. The degree of similarity between the child's conception of a parent's "nurturance" and "control" attitudes (presumably toward him) as assessed in the structured doll-play interview and his own nurturance-control attitude was used as an index of the child's identification with the parent.

The findings of this study showed that the tendency to select the same-sexed parent's attitude as a model turned out to be statistically significant for boys but not for girls. Moreover, while boys discriminate between parental roles on the nurturance-control dimension, girls do not, to a significant extent.

Although Emmerich briefly proposes the possibility that "parents tend to differ more in their nurturance-control attitudes toward their sons than toward their daughters", he rejects this on the basis of a questionnaire given to the parents. However, he does include a table within his study which shows that it is the nurturance-control attitude of the father which is scored most differently by the sexes (girls giving him a much more nurturant score than boys). From this

data, it would appear that there may be a discrepancy between what fathers perceive to be their attitudes toward their children (as indicated by the questionnaire) and what the children perceive those attitudes toward them to be. Since the focus of attention in sex role development is often on the child's identification with the same-sex parent, it seems important to consider the implications of this study's finding that girls fail to make a distinction between their parents on the nurturance-control dimension.

A,E 7,8 Emmerich, W. Variations in the parent role as a function of the parent's sex and the child's sex and age. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1962, 8, 3-11.

In this study, the data was collected through the use of a questionnaire completed by a group of middle class parents. The parents answered questions concerning their actual role performance with their own children at yearly intervals beginning when the children were six years old and ending at ten years of age. Dimensions of nurturance, restriction, and power were chosen as descriptive properties of parent role differentiation. These dimensions were defined in the following ways: nurturance was "a positive facilitating reaction to 'legitimate' reciprocal child role behavior"; restriction was "a negative, interfering reaction to 'illegitimate' child behavior"; power was "the amount of active control exerted by parents in response to the child's behavior".

The results of the study showed that overall, fathers were more restrictive than mothers. Also, parents exerted more power toward the same-sex than opposite sex offspring throughout all intervals. Finally, one outcome of the study related to the fact that the data was gathered over a period of several years concerns the fact that parental nurturance seemed to vary in a cyclical fashion as a function of the child's age. This was especially true for parental nurturance toward sons.

E 7,8 Fagot, B. I. Sex differences in toddlers' behavior and parental reaction. Developmental Psychology, 1974, 10, 554-558.

The study attempts to compare parents' values concerning sex differences in child-rearing, with their behavior concerning the same in the home.

Subjects included six boys and six girls (ages 18-24 months) who were only children, with their parents. Families were observed in the home, in normal interaction. Observers rated their behavior on a checklist; this included 46 specific child behaviors, 19 parental reactions, and 7 child moods. Each category of behavior was rated once per minute during 5 hours of observation per family. Parents were also asked to rate the same child behaviors and moods, as feminine, masculine, or neutral, and to answer a questionnaire on their values concerning sex-roles and child-rearing practices.

Observational results showed significant sex differences in six child behaviors, and no mood differences. Parents criticized boys more and praised girls more. They were more likely to leave him on his

own. Fathers sex-typed more behaviors than mothers, and both parents rated more behaviors as inappropriate for males. The questionnaire dealt with the time spent with the child and relative responses of each parent, and showed high agreement between spouses.

In summary, the author notes that despite the strong egalitarian values expressed by some of the parents, there still appeared significant, sex-of-child differences in the behavioral assessment of their childrearing practices.

The study is good in that it tests rather than assumes the equatability of self-report to actual behavior. Also, it includes direct data on both the father and the mother, as well as children of both sexes, which makes comparison credible. Small sample size prevents generalizing conclusions; however, a follow-up study was done (see Fagot, 1977).

E 7 Fagot, B. I. Sex-determined parental reinforcing contingencies in toddler children. Paper presented to the Society for Research in Child Development, New Orleans, March 1977.

This study is essentially a follow-up of a previous one (see Fagot, 1974). Its dual focus is the reinforcement contingencies of parents towards child behavior, and how these contingencies vary as a function of the child's sex.

Subjects included 12 boys and 12 girls (20-24 months of age) who were the only child in their families, as well as both their parents. Families were observed in normal home interaction, and rated on a checklist identical to the one used in Fagot (1974), with the omission of the child mood scale. Parents were asked to rate the 46 child behaviors on the checklist and answer a questionnaire identical to that used in the former study.

Seven child behaviors showed significant sex differences in occurrence in the children. Parents rated 5 behaviors as being sex-typed: the 3 behaviors rated as feminine concurred with the observational data, but the 2 behaviors rated as masculine did not match the observational data. Not only did these latter 2 rated behaviors fail to concur with differences in the children, but the parents also failed to react differentially to them when they did occur.

Judges were asked to select from the list of child behaviors those items which fell under any of three rubrics: active motor play, dependency on adults, and aggression. These areas are often cited as showing sex differences. Eight items fell into one of these three categories, but only one (asking for help) had any real-life counterpart in the observational data.

The study differentiates between self-report and actual behavior, and reveals the danger of relying too heavily on self-report. The breakdown of behavior into 66 (46 child, 20 parent) specific behaviors allows both for fine distinctions and objectivity. Findings replicate the first study, but still sample size is small.

T,E 8 Heilbrun, A. Parent identification and filian sex role behavior: The importance of biological context. In J. Cole & R. Dienstbier (Eds.), Nebraska symposium on motivation. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1973. Pp. 125-194.

In this article, the author outlines some problems of simplistic theories of parent identification which he feels tends to hinder progress toward understanding human sex role behavior. One of these problems involves a lack of distinction between identification as process and identification as outcome. Although it is generally agreed that identification of a child with his parent should result in some degree of learned similarity, research measures often fail to distinguish between sources. Heilbrun states the need to acknowledge that this similarity could be the outcome of other factors (for example, genetic influences). Another aspect of this article involves Heilbrun's support of perceived similarity as a measure of identification. According to him, modeling behavior represents which the child considers to be an imitation of the model; thus, it seems reasonable to measure the extent of modeling by comparing the child's perceived model with the child's description of his own behavior.

The overall point of this article is to acknowledge variables which will generate more complex theories of identification. For example, Heilbrun contends that a child's sex-role development is better understood in the light of the extent of congruity of psychological and biological sex of parents as this may interact with the sex of the child. In a study of his own, Heilbrun cites findings that model incongruity makes a difference for males, but not for females; daughters seem to use either parent as an identification model with a disengagement from the model concerning sex role properties of her own identity.

If Heilbrun's contentions are correct, they contradict any attempts to equate identification with overt behavioral similarities, at least as far as father-daughter identification is concerned. An uncommon inclusion in the discussion of parental identification is Heilbrun's acknowledgement of variability in sex-role behavior of parents. Exponents of same-sex identification as the essential factor in sex-role development of children don't usually recognize the fact that the gender of the parent doesn't always imply traditional sex-role behavior.

A,T,E 8 Heilbrun, A. Identification with the father and sex-role development of the daughter. Family Coordinator, 1976, 411-416.

This article is in part a critical analysis of traditional model-theories of identification, in which boys are assumed to model after their fathers and girls after their mothers. The author presents his own findings from some earlier studies which refute such a proposition; it was found that daughters identified primarily with masculine fathers presented feminine sex-role behaviors quite distinct from the masculine behaviors of sons identified with the same type of parent model.

There is a discussion of three hypotheses proposed by the author in an attempt to explain a feminine daughter's identification with a

masculine father. The first hypothesis involves an assumption that the masculine father has a double standard for his behavior; to the world he presents a traditional "tough" masculine image, but to his daughter he displays a less masculine or even feminine behavior which the daughter emulates. The second hypothesis concerns the idea that female offspring greatly transmute observed behavior; thus, they are capable of modeling after the father's masculine behavior in such a way that it is transformed into feminine behavior before being incorporated into the daughter's repertory. The third hypothesis deals with a suggestion that feminine girls identifying with their fathers make a second type of identification with males in general which involves experiencing vicarious rewards when males are rewarded. Heilbrun goes on to state that daughters who identify with their fathers, but who do not make this second general identification with males "...do not seem to resonate vicariously with what happens to men...are over-represented in the homosexual ranks." He finally concludes that this type of father identification "exacts a pretty heavy toll from the daughters".

Heilbrun gives an illuminating analysis of the problems involved in attempting to empirically demonstrate that parental modeling does exert an important influence upon sex-role development of the child. He describes complicating factors not usually acknowledged in identification studies, such as the fact that parents themselves are not pure sex-role types and the possibility that boys and girls may behave quite differently from one another in their modeling behavior. However, his final assumption that females who do not receive vicarious enjoyment from males obtaining rewards are likely to experience heterosexual problems seems to be a male elitivst viewpoint, especially since there is no mention of a possible lack of personal ambitions in females resulting from such a general male identification.

A,E 8 Hetherington, E. M. A developmental study of the effects of sex of the dominant parent on sex-role preference, identification, and imitation in children. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology, 1965, 2, 188-194.

In this study, parental dominance was measured by having parents discuss and agree on a solution to several child-rearing problems. Discussions were taped and scored for dominance of each parent. On this basis, father-dominant and mother-dominant families were selected. The children in the study, who were 36 boys and 36 girls, at each of three age levels: 4-5, 6-8, and 9-11, were then tested for sex-role preference on the It Scale. They were given an imitation-measuring task in which they could imitate the mother's or the father's behavior. Also, a rating list of adjectives was given to friends of the parents and teachers of the children to rate the parents and children to that objective similarity of parent and child could be assessed.

The results of this study showed that girls developed a preference for their sex-role at a later age than boys. When the father was dominant, appropriate sex roles were found, but interaction effects

indicated that this was only significant for boys. Older children were more likely to resemble the dominant parent and this was particularly true in a mother-dominant family. Boys were more similar to the dominant parent, but for girls, father-dominance led to an equal identification with both parents. Children imitated the dominant parent more than the passive parent, but there were no differences in imitation of mothers or fathers by either sex.

E 8 Hetherington, E. M. The effects of familial variables on sex-typing, on parent-child similarity, and on imitation in children. In J. Hill (Ed.), Minnesota Symposia on Child Psychology, Volume 1. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1967.

Heatherington briefly reviews the different theoretical perspectives and empirical work in the literature on identification, especially as related to sex-typing in children. A series of three studies is presented which investigates the relation of parental dominance, nurturance, and conflict to sex-role typing in the child, parent-child similarity, and the child's imitation of the parents.

Study I: This appears elsewhere in this bibliography (see Heatherington, 1965).

Study II: The Effects of Parental Dominance, Warmth, and Conflict on the Child's Imitation of the Parent were assessed by means of the Structured Family Interaction Test (SFIT). The child's imitation of each parent was measured in eight trials, alternating between parents. Findings on dominance generally replicated Study I. Warmth was found to facilitate imitation, with maternal warmth especially salient to girls. In a high conflict, low warmth home, children imitated the dominant parent. The most overriding variables were paternal dominance with respect to boys, and maternal warmth with respect to girls--both of which facilitated same-sex imitation.

Study III: The Relation of Parental Characteristics and Child-rearing Practices to Sex-typing, Parent-child Similarity, and Imitation.

Parental assessment occurred in two sessions, using the SFIT, dominance and femininity scales of the CPI, and an interview with each parent about child-rearing practices and parent-child relationships. Children were assessed on sex-role preference, similarity to and imitation of parent, via the It Scale for Children, adjective checklist, and an aesthetic preference test respectively. As an additional measure of sex-typing, the relative time spent by each child playing with masculine and feminine toys was recorded. Correlations between the parent and child variables are numerous and complex, and generally supportive of the previous studies, as well as reciprocal role theory.

The author suggests that the familial variables are most salient for girls, while boys are more influenced by extrafamilial pressures to conform to a given masculine sex-role. Theoretical implications are discussed.

5 Houston, S. Father absence and the development of sex role. Australian Journal of Social Issues, 1973, 8(8), 209-216. (See page 177.)

T,E 8 Johnson, M. M. Sex-role learning in the nuclear family. Child Development, 1963, 34, 319-333.

This article addresses the issue of the acquisition of gender identity from a reciprocal role theoretical perspective. The major proposal is that "identification with the father, in the sense of internalizing a reciprocal role relationship with the father,...is crucial for producing appropriate sex role orientations in both males and females". Building on Parsonian masculine/instrumental-feminine/expressive distinction, the author reasons that the father interacts expressively with his daughter, and instrumentally with his son; in the author's words, he plays "husband to the girl and mentor to the boy." In contrast, the mother treats both boys and girls simply as children, and interacts with them expressively. Therefore the son has the opportunity to interact both instrumentally and expressively, while the daughter's experience is limited to expressive interaction.

The author discusses the motivation and internalization of expressive and instrumental action, and articulates the salience of the father in perpetuating this system. She also reviews some empirical evidence which supports and illustrates her position.

The article is well-written and logical as a presentation of reciprocal role theory, and is often cited as such. However, the assumptions made about familial roles are somewhat dated, particularly with respect to more recent evidence for the murturant aspects of fatherhood.

T 8 Kohlberg, L. A cognitive-developmental analysis of children's sex-role concepts and attitudes. In E. E. Maccoby (Ed.), The development of sex differences. Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1966.

This is a major treatment of the cognitive-developmental approach to the development of gender identity. In the author's words, "the child's sex-role concepts are the result of the child's active structuring of his own experience", rather than being a passive reaction to internal or external forces. According to this theory, then, the child first must identify himself as a boy or girl, and afterwards actively acquire the characteristics he feels are appropriate--usually by modelling his behavior after someone he sees as similar to what he is, or should be. These characteristics are in themselves rewarding, because they are consonant with the way the child has classified himself; and they change as he develops and restructures his concept of masculinity and femininity. This concept is obtained mostly by perceiving the behavior of others, which he tends to assimilate and modify as his concept of himself as male or female develops.

Cognitive-developmental theory is thoroughly compared with social learning and Freudian theories of development. Kohlberg also extensively reviews the empirical literature related to gender identity, in a cognitive-developmental light, including a presentation of several of his own studies. In summary, he discusses familial and cultural factors which influence children's sex-role attitudes.

In this theory, there is a close tie between the progress of the child's sexual understanding and his more general cognitive and moral development (as conceived by Piaget). This relationship is borne out

by research sometimes; but a major problem of Kohlberg's theory is that children acquire a sense of gender constancy far sooner than he predicts. Money, in his work with hermaphrodites, has found that if a child's sexual assignment is changed after about 18 months of age, there will be severe psychological repercussions. However, Kohlberg has postulated that the child acquires gender constancy about the same time as object constancy, which does not occur until 4 or 5 years of age.

This article is a major and exhaustive discussion of the topic and as such is important reading. While its direct focus is the child, it articulates the father's theoretical role in the child's development.

T 8 Lamb, M. E., & Urberg, K. A. The development of gender role and gender identity. In M. E. Lamb (Ed.), Sociopersonality development. New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1978 (in press).

This is a review covering gender role and identity from the viewpoints of biology, Freudian theory, learning theories, and cognitive-developmental theories.

This review affords concise understanding of the different perspectives, especially as they interrelate; it is wide-ranging without being general, and is well-documented. The deficiencies in the literature are vast, and the authors have provided some provocative suggestions for future theorizing and research.

T,C 8 Leonard, M. R. Fathers and daughters. International Journal of Psychoanalysis, 1966, 47, 325-333.

This article is written from the viewpoint of a clinician bound to Freudian tradition who claims that there are two periods in the life of a female when she is especially in need of fathering: (1) the Oedipal situation when the father becomes the daughter's love-object; (2) early adolescence, during which time the daughter needs reassurance from her father that he sees her as a young budding female.

The author illustrates the adverse effects of ineffective fathering during these periods by describing the cases of different women who had undergone psychiatric treatment. It was demonstrated through dream interpretation, analysis of family background, and observation of current behavior that one effect of non-participating fathers was the development of a fixation by the daughter at the phallic boy-like stage of development, while one effect of seductive fathers was the inability of the daughter to form attachments with other men later in her life. The author ends this article by stating that "It takes a mature man, one who has found an unneurotic solution to this own Oedipal conflict and has achieved a satisfying marriage relationship, to be able to offer his daughter de-sexualized affection at crucial stages of development."

It is rather difficult to accept claims made about the effects of "abnormal" fathering in this article since the documentation is based purely on perceptions of one psychoanalyst in a clinical situation.

T 8 Lewis, M. Parents and children: Sex role development. School Review, 1972, 80, 229-240.

The article discusses differential socialization as a function of sex of child. This process begins before birth as the parents prepare to raise the expected child, and continues through childhood. In adulthood, the culture replaces the parents as primary socializing agent. Cross-cultural differences in sex-stereotypes are briefly discussed.

This easy-reading presentation is a short and simplified description of socialization theory. Although the main principles of the theory are presented, the article is too brief and general to be more than an introductory overview.

T,E 7,8 Lynn, D. The father: His role in child development. Monterey: Brooks/Cole Co., 1974.

Lynn discusses a variety of topics, such as background information on sex differences verified by empirical investigations and a classification of the determinants of sex-role behavior into three broad interacting categories: (1) biologically rooted potentials; (2) parent-child relationships; (3) cultural reinforcements of traditional sex roles. Lynn concludes that "like father, like son" holds not as a generalization, but only for specific traits; a masculine son may be more similar to his mother than to his father in characteristics that the society does not sex-type.

Lynn states that most of the studies he reviewed support the position that the father, in his instrumental function of launching his children into society, is more concerned that the mother with enhancing his boy's masculinity and his girl's femininity. Moreover, these studies suggest that although the father may be particularly interested in ensuring his boy's masculinity, he may in fact be more effective in enhancing his girl's femininity.

E 8 Lynn, D., & DePalma Cross, A. Parent preference of preschool children. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1974, 36, 555-559.

The purpose of the study is to determine which parent is preferred by preschool boys and girls in the experimental situation. The authors begin on the premise that all very young children identify with the mother as the primary caretaker. They reason, on the basis of previous research, that boys, "perceiving that they belong in a different category than the mother, are strongly motivated to avoid being feminine and to acquire masculine characteristics." Girls, however, feel no such motivation, since their identification with the mother is appropriate. The prediction, then, is that boys will show strong father-preference in an attempt to assert their masculinity and deny their former feminine identification with the mother. Girls, feeling no such conflict, should show no significant preference.

Subjects included 150 children, ages 2, 3, and 4. In individual sessions, the experimenter asked the child which parent he preferred to help him on each of 7 tasks. Analysis showed that 2-year-old girls and 3-year-old boys significantly preferred their fathers. All other boys, and 3-year-old girls showed nonsignificant preference for the father's help. Four-year-old girls preferred their mothers at a significant level. In combined-age groups, boys preferred their fathers while girls showed no significant preference. Thus the experimental hypothesis is moderately supported.

These results are interesting, especially in the company of other studies who measure parent preference with diverse methods, and find similar results. Furthermore, they underline the long-ignored salience of the father to his child.

T,E 8 Maccoby, E., & Jacklin, C. Sex-typing and the role of modeling. In E. Maccoby & C. Jacklin (Eds.), The psychology of sex differences. Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1974.

This discussion on sex-typing and the role of modeling comes out of a comprehensive text on the psychology of sex differences which includes an annotated bibliography of over 200 sources. In their review of major theories of sex-typing (of which most involve aspects of modeling/identification) the author found certain assumptions concerning why the characteristics of a model should affect the two sexes differently. These assumptions are as follows: (1) sex-role acquisition involves imitation as well as differential reinforcement; (2) since parents are highly available, nurturant, and powerful, they are the models most likely to be copied in the acquisition of sex-typed behavior; (3) children are more frequently exposed to models of their own sex than to cross-sex models; (4) same-sex models will be imitated more than cross-sex ones because the child tends to imitate models whom he perceives as similar to himself.

The authors note that points (1) and (2) would not jointly be sufficient to explain the acquisition of sex-typed behavior through modeling since it has been clearly demonstrated that children of both sexes will imitate the more powerful or nurturant model, other things being equal. After reviewing the existing literature on the availability of same-sex models and the selection of same-sex models (the issues involved in points (3) and (4), the authors make the following statements: first of all, models of both sexes are plentifully available to both boys and girls, and children can learn what behavior is considered appropriate for each sex. Secondly, research to date hasn't shown any consistent tendancy for children of preschool or grade school age to select same-sex models with regard to imitation of such behaviors as affection, aggression, etc. A final conclusion made by the authors is that it appears that sex-typing doesn't originate through modeling.

It seems important to note that although most of the research shows that sex-typing isn't related to modeling, this doesn't necessarily mean that modeling isn't important in the acquisition of sex-typed be-

havior, but that perhaps the ways in which modeling has been assumed to be important for sex-role development (for example, imitation of the same-sex parent) may not generally be the case.

T,E 8 Maccoby, E. E., & Jacklin, C. N. Differential socialization of boys and girls. The psychology of sex differences. Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1974.

The authors make an exhaustive review of the evidence for the theory that parents' differential socialization practices lead to sex-typing in children. Studies are summarized under 11 headings (e.g., parental warmth, restrictiveness, verbal interaction, etc.) and are listed in tables which report significant findings.

According to the authors, the literature falls under four main hypotheses: (1) Parents differentially shape boys and girls; (2) Boys and girls elicit differential responses from parents; (3) Parents react to a child on the basis of their expectations of how a child of a given sex should act; and (4) A parent's behavior towards a child is affected by the sex of the parent relative to the sex of the child.

On the basis of the conclusions drawn from their collation, the authors evaluate these four hypotheses. In general, they find "a remarkable degree of uniformity in the socialization of the two sexes", but they state this with the caution that the data is far from adequate enough to draw any solid conclusions.

For a critique of this review, see Block (1975) in this bibliography.

NOTE: Maccoby and Jacklin, in the annotated bibliography of this book, describe over 200 studies which cover a range of topics related to sex differences.

T 8 Machtlinger, V. J. Psychoanalytic theory: Pre-oedipal and oedipal phases, with special reference to the father. In M. E. Lamb (Ed.), The role of the father in child development. New York: Wiley, 1976.

The author reviews trends in psychoanalytic theory--both the evolution of Freud's own ideas, and changes in the emphasis of the Freudian school over time. In the beginning, psychoanalytic theory considered child development only as a breeding ground for adult neuroses. More recently, however, various psychoanalysts have shifted their emphasis from adults to children. This change has led to "less exclusive preoccupation with neurotic phenomena and childhood neurosis as such, and instead a growing interest in and knowledge of normal developmental processes, together with the factors that contribute to the so-called developmental failures . . ."

The development of Freud's ideas concerning the phallic-oedipal phase is traced, focusing on his failure to completely articulate a theory of female sexuality, and on his explanation of bisexuality. An attempt is made to resolve Freudian theory with recent evidence suggesting that the father is more salient to the child's psychological

development (in a nurturant capacity) than has traditionally been supposed. In the author's words, "although psychoanalytic theory has tended to neglect the role of the father in the pre-oedipal phases of development, this is not true of developmental--analytical--observational studies, or of clinical psychoanalysis--which recognize the fundamental importance to the child of the early father relationship." She illustrates this point with several reports of case studies, and concludes with a discussion of the theoretical implications of father absence.

The author draws a concise and thorough description of the topic. Although she cites many clinical-observational studies and individual case reports, she does not present much sound empirical data to substantiate her reasoning.

T,E 8 Mischel, W. Sex-typing and socialization. In P. H. Mussen (Ed.), Carmichael's manual of child psychology. New York: Wiley, 1970.

The author amplifies the viewpoint of social learning theory that same-sex models will be imitated more than opposite sex ones because the child tends to imitate models whom he perceives as similar to himself.

Also included is a summary of a series of studies, all done with adults or children aged 12 or older, in which some models were objectively more similar to the viewers than others, or a perception of similarity was induced by telling the viewer that a given model shared some of his tastes and attributes whereas another model did not. In these studies it was repeatedly demonstrated that viewers are more likely to match some aspect of their behavior to a model's if that model is perceived as similar to themselves. In addition, Mischel states that imitation is more likely to occur when learners have little information; when their own past experience provides little guidance to what behavior is appropriate.

Although it is possible to extrapolate from these findings to the probability that an adolescent or adult will imitate a same-sex model rather than an opposite-sex model when the fact of shared sex is revelant to the situation, it seems important to point out the fact that the subjects in the experiments cited by Mischel were old enough to be fairly sophisticated about perceiving similarities between themselves and others. Younger children may not be as likely to take note of the fact than another person is of the same sex as themselves and govern their imitation accordingly. Kohlberg is one proponent of the theory that selective imitation on this basis ought not to occur until children have established a fairly stable concept of their own sex, which he believes occurs no earlier than 5 or 6 years of age.

Money, J., & Ehrhardt, A. A. Man and woman, boy and girl. Baltimore: John Hopkins University Press, 1972.

The authors state their goal is to organize old and new knowledge into a theory "not simply of psychosexual development but also of psycho-

sexual differentiation, and into a theory encompassing all the determinants of human sexual behavior more comprehensively than is done by traditional developmental theories of masculinity and femininity." There is emphasis throughout the book on the interaction of heredity and environment, biology, and culture.

Although there is much technical information and physiologic research reported the book is quite readable. A very helpful glossary is included. It is a good reference for deviant gender manifestations and therapies which consider medical as well as social and psychological factors.

Paternal behavior is discussed throughout the book in various contexts. There is an extensive bibliography included.

T,E, Ed 2,8 Mussen, P., Conger, J., & Kagan, J. Child development and personality. New York: Harper and Row, 1956.

In this book, in which the authors propose to trace the process of development of the total, integrated personality of the child, there is a discussion of sex-typing in the chapter on preschool personality development. This discussion is relevant to questions which may be raised concerning the father's role in sex-role development, since parent-child interaction has been thought of by most researchers as a basic factor in the process of sex-typing.

One aspect of sex-typing which the authors discuss includes mechanisms by which the child acquires sex-typed behaviors. One of these mechanisms is proposed to be that of identification with the same-sexed parent. In their discussion of identification, the authors include far-reaching illustrations of this complex concept, such as identification (in later years) not only with individuals, but with groups and institutions; also, a parent's identification with his/her child, which the authors state is a common occurance. However, with regard to the acquisition of sex-typed behavior, the focus of attention, as stated previously, is on the preschooler's identification with the same-sexed parent. In presenting some research on sex-typing and identification, the authors point out the findings that both boys and girls have a tendancy to view the father as the more powerful and competent parent. It is hypothesized that if this is so, the girl should be in more conflict about which parental model to choose for identification. This hypothesis was verified in a doll-play study cited by the authors in which boys much more frequently identified with fathers than mothers, while girls showed an equal amount of identification with both mother and father.

Although one can't be certain that dolly-play behavior furnishes a valid index of identification, the possibility that girls may see their fathers as more favorable models for identification than their mothers may have some important implications for the father-daughter relationship, particularly with regard to the daughter's acquisition of sex-typed behavior. It would seem that the notion of same-sex identification as the essential identification process occuring in early sex-role development may be too simplistic an explanation, especially where girls are concerned.

E 7,8 Osofsky, J., & O'Connell, E. J. Parent-child interaction: daughters' effects upon mothers' and fathers' behaviors. Developmental Psychology, 1972, 7, 157-168.

Forty-one 5-year-old girls were observed in a lab setting with both parents. Their dependent/independent behavior was manipulated by giving them puzzles to complete that were too hard/very easy for them to complete by themselves. Puzzles were accompanied by a suggestion from the experimenter to the child that she would probably need/not need her parents' help to complete the puzzles. After the puzzles were finished, each parent was interviewed separately, while the other parent and the child were observed in unstructured interaction in the playroom.

Results indicate differential interactions in the mother-daughter and father-daughter dyads. With the mother, the child seems to desire expressive feedback and emotional support more than instrumental aid. The mother is more likely to encourage her daughter to do the task on her own. In contrast, the father elicits more instrumental, goal-oriented responses from his daughter. She is more likely to clearly indicate whether she can or cannot do the task.

These results illustrate the complexity of family dynamics. The focus of the study is somewhat different than most others, who see the child as a recipient, rather than an initiator of parental socialization. Of course, it is likely that the child has been socialized to interact differentially with each parent, or that each parent directly elicits differential responses from the child. A similar study with young boys and their parents would prove an interesting comparison.

T 2,7 Parsons, T., & Bales, R. Family, socialization, and interaction process. New York: Free Press, 1955.

In the chapter entitled "Family structure and the socialization of the child", Parsons and Bales develop a theory which emphasizes father interaction, as well as other family members' interactions, within the context of the family structure. For example, the authors see the father as fulfilling primarily an instrumental role within the family; he functions as the family's financial supporter and connection to the "outside world". If this theory is an accurate illustration of the "real" situation, it should follow that the father is the parent most concerned with how his children fit into society, and that he will be the primary transmitter of culturally determined concepts of masculinity and femininity. An important aspect of the authors' viewpoint involves their concern with recognizing multiple role relations going on within a family. This view suggests that one cannot treat the father as an isolated object and analyze another family member's relationship to him.

In dealing with the concept of identification, the authors suggest that the term be used to designate "the process of internalization of any common collective 'we categorization' and with it the common values of requisite collectivity". In this sense of the concept, a child's identification doesn't have to imply that the child's behavior is

similar to the parent with whom he has identified; rather, the child's identification may be the result of a reciprocal role relationship in which the child and parent participate at various times.

The proposal that identification may evolve through the development of a reciprocal role relationship is another contribution to the complexity of this process. The conceptions developed by these authors imply that daughters can identify with fathers, and sons with mothers, as part of a "normal" process of family relationships. Also, the authors make an implicit distinction between the terms "identification" and "imitation"; the former refers to a more general orientation while the latter is applicable only to specific behaviors.

5,7 Pederson, F. A., & Robson, K. S. Father participation in infancy. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1969, 39, 466-472. (See page 4.)

E,T 8 Pilbegm, D. Man as the naked ape. New York Times Magazine, September 3, 1972, 30.

Pilbegm, an anthropologist, describes and interprets his own research. Since the research data is not presented, the reader has no way of judging whether the author's interpretation is reasonable or not.

Among African Bushmen who maintain a hunting society, sex roles are undifferentiated and no sexual distinction is made in childrearing. However, those who have moved into a more organized, agricultural society have sex roles which are more rigid. Boys and girls are socialized quite differently.

The author suggests men will insist on sex role segregation even when there is no rational necessity for it in order to preserve their importance in the society.

E,T 8 Rosenburg, B. G., & Sutton-Smith, B. Family structure and sex-role variations. In J. Cole & R. Dienstbier (Eds.), Nebraska Symposium on Motivation. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1973. Pp. 195-220.

This article's focus is on the influence that different structural components of the family might have upon sex roles and the many ways in which this influence might be manifested. Of particular interest to investigators of father interaction in the family are several studies done by the authors described in this article in which they discovered that the father's responses to a sex-role inventory are significantly affected by the sex of his children.

In one study, the sample was composed of 160 college sophomore females and 89 males, their actual siblings (males and females), and their mothers and fathers. The Gough Scale of Psychological Femininity (1952) was administered directly to the subjects' own siblings, mothers, and fathers. All of the subjects were members of a two-child family. The results of this study indicate that the more males there are in the family, the more masculine is his score. In otherwords, fathers of the male dyads are relatively more willing, on the Gough Scale, to admit to anxiety, sensitivity, etc., which are behaviors traditionally regarded as feminine. The difference is significant and most striking between fathers of the all-girl dyads and fathers of the all-boy dyads. After presenting various findings of different studies,

the authors end their discussion of family structure and sex role variations by stating that while family-structural effects touch only a fragment of the contributions to sex-role identity, their data shows that these effects are multiple.

The focus of this article, which involves an examination of possible interactions between family structure and sex roles, is an uncommon one among the many investigations into sex role development. Factors which are more commonly looked at involved biological influences, parent-child interaction, and social influences. Moreover, the emphasis of most studies is on the child's sex-role behavior rather than that of the parent. The findings presented in this article can be interpreted to support the notion that human sex roles are much diversified than sex-role stereotypes seem to indicate.

A,E 8 Rapoport, R., & Rapoport, R. Early and later experiences as determinants of adult behavior. British Journal of Sociology, 1971, 22, 16-30.

In this study, the researchers used as their dependent variable, married females in the work force whom they surveyed through a questionnaire. Adult behavior with regard to the patterning of work/career orientation was examined. The early life independent variables considered were the following: birth order; father's occupation; mother's occupation; family relationships. The first three determinants were objective while the fourth was more subjective. All of these determinants were treated as possible psychosocial environments influencing the respondant in some way--not as determinants of behavior in and of themselves.

One finding involving the family relationship variable concerned the greater tendancy for married females with children to be continuous workers if they had a "tense" relationship with their mothers and a "warm" relationship with their fathers than any other combination of specific relationships with parents of the same and opposite sex. The authors state that this finding cannot be interpreted necessarily as "cross-sex identification"; however, some research indicates a tendancy for those subjects with this type of identification to be more "creative", and a characteristic such as "creativity" seems to be in keeping with some aspects of a person's motivation to have an occupation outside the home. One example of this might be the desire to seek out a greater variety of everyday living environments. The current life independent variables examined (husband's attitude toward wife's work; marital happiness; perceived social network) were not shown to be related to the subjects' fathers' interaction with them.

In attempting to examine how early and current variables combine to influence behavior, these researchers have illuminated the possibility that early and later influences interact in rather more complex ways than is generally realized. In view of this development, it may be useful to consider the evolution of human personality as a process of "metamorphosis" as well as a more simplistic "additive" process of reinforcement or counteraction of what has gone before.

E 8 Rubin, J. Z., Provenzano, F. J., & Luria, Z. The eye of the beholder: Parents' views on sex of newborns. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1974, 44(4), 512-519.

Thirty pairs of primiparous parents, fifteen with sons and fifteen with daughters, were interviewed and completed questionnaires involving eighteen, eleven point, bipolar adjectives describing infants, within the first 24 hours postpartum. Although male and female infants did not differ in birth length, weight, or Apgar scores, daughters were significantly more likely than sons to be described as little, beautiful, pretty, and cute, and as resembling their mothers. Fathers who had not even handled their infants, made more extreme and stereotyped rating judgments of their newborns than did the mothers who had handled their infants. These findings seem to suggest that sex-typing and sex-role socialization have already begun at birth.

Further studies in various areas and socioeconomic groups are needed before widespread generalizations can be made. However, the obtained results are interesting.

A,E 8 Seward, G. Cultural conflict and the feminine role: An experimental study. Journal of Social Psychology, 1945, 22, 177-194.

In this study, the researcher investigated women's attitudes toward their role in the post World War II period. The subjects of the study were 147 female college students enrolled in an introductory psychology course. A questionnaire was given to the total group of subjects which included questions such as: "I'll stop working if I have a child; I'll love, honor, and obey my husband; I expect some work opportunities as a female."

On the basis of test results, liberal and conservative personality extremes were compared. One aspect of this comparison was a search of backgrounds by means of a controlled interview for possible differences in the area of family relationships. The results of this search showed that the home backgrounds of liberals deviated significantly from the traditional pattern (the Parsonian instrumental/expressive dichotomy). There was less conformity to established mores in these subjects' families, which the author took to mean less emotional security within these families. Although liberal females sometimes described their fathers as being "dominant", there were also frequent reports that the father was "introverted". On the other hand, conservative females more consistently described their fathers as "dominant" and "head of household".

It is interesting to note that while the author takes care to point out a possible negative outcome of growing up in a less traditional household (that is, lack of emotional security), nothing is mentioned about possible benefits derived from such a family life (such as facilitation of a more creative personality through exposure to a wider variety of adult role combinations?) It is clearly a value judgment one way or the other; nothing in this study indicates that one set of women is "happier" than the others. Indeed, such a

question was not put directly to the subjects. It would be most illuminating to know which of the subjects were satisfied with the circumstances of their lives based on their own answers to such a question.

T 8 Simon, W., & Gagnan, J. H. Psychosexual development. In A. Skolnick & J. H. Skolnick (Eds.), Intimacy, family and society. Boston: Little, Brown and Co., 1974.

This article postulates a theory of sexuality that rejects the assumption that psychosexual drives are both powerful and fixed biological attributes. The authors agree with the Freudian notion of sexuality developing from infancy rather than appearing suddenly at puberty. However, they view situations in childhood which can be termed sexual (e.g., childhood msturbation) as being only potentiating behaviors. True adult sexuality is defined as "scripted" behavior which is learned in a social context as any other behavior is learned.

During adolescence sexuality in males is under stronger biological influence than at any other time in life.

Greater separation for males of sex from romance, warmth, and commitment is noted.

This theory implies great potential for teaching and learning sexual behavior to fit the expected cultural norms. There are many implications for clinicians and educators working with adolescent boys, fathers, and non-fathers.

E 8 Spence, J. T., Helmreich, R., & Stapps, J. Ratings of self and peer self-esteem and androgyny. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology, 1975, 32,(1), 29-39.

This article is included in this bibliography for the sole purpose of providing an alternative means of looking at androgyny from a psychometric research perspective.

Their methodology: 242 male and 282 female subjects were given the Personal Attributes Questionnaire consisting of 55 bipolar attributes. First, they were asked to rate themselves on these 55 items. Then they were asked to compare the typical male with the typical female college student. Also administered were the Attitudes Toward Women Scale and the Texas Social Behavior Inventory, a measure of social self-esteem. Detailed statistical analyses and discussion of the results are provided.

In summary, the results revealed that there was a "small and only occasional significance between the ratings of stereotyped males and females and their self-ratings. This was interpreted to indicate the independence of these two ratings. That is, perceived societal stereotype had little relationship to how subjects saw themselves.

As hypothesized, individuals identified as strong sex-typed held conservative views about women's roles. Highly significant correla-

tions between masculinity and self-esteem were found in both males and females. At the same time, significant positive correlations between femininity and self-esteem were found for both men and women.

The authors suggest that androgyny, defined as possession of a high degree of both masculinity and femininity, may have an additive effect in influencing attitudes and behaviors of individuals. To quantify the additive effect of androgyny, a four-point masculinity-femininity-androgyny index was developed: low masculine-low feminine; hi masculine-low feminine; low masculine-hi feminine; hi masculine-hi feminine. Subjects, both males and females, classified as androgynous (hi masculine-hi feminine) were highest in self-esteem. This approach differs from the subtractive method used by Bem. Subjects classified as low androgynous (low masculine-low feminine) according to Spence et al. could be considered androgynous according to Bem's method. Data collected for this study rescored in accordance with Bem's model proved this assertion to be true. More work is needed comparing these two and considering other rating methods.

The data supports the conceptualization of the existence of masculinity and femininity as independent entities existing in both males and females to differing degrees. The items identified for typical mean and women did fall into the instrumental-expressive dichotomy alluded to by Parsons and Bales (1955). However the data indicates that both men and women possess certain of both sets of qualities. Androgyny is judged a highly desirable quality contributing to effective personal and social functioning.

A,E Ed B Taconis, L. The role of the contemporary father in rearing young children. Educational Research, 1969, 11, 83-94.

This article is an extensive review of research categorized in the following areas: the neglect of the father's role; changing patterns of family life; the family as a social system; father-separated children; faulty paternal relationships; the role of the father in sex-role development; the role of the father as seen by the child; the significance of paternity to the father; the father's role.

Two parallel trends emerge from the summarized material. First, an increasing number of fathers are rearing their young children and enjoying it. Second, the importance of the father's role is slowly being realized in research on child-rearing. The final part of the discussion deals with implications for education derived from research findings. The main point made concerns the idea that if fathers are important for a child's development, then male adults are needed as teachers of young children so that they may become extensions of the male model provided by the father at home.

This review revealed the complexity involved in researching family relationships such as that between father and child. This complexity was apparent from the many categorizations of research made by the author in this review of studies. In considering the implications for education proposed by the author, it seems as though Taconis is agreeing with the implicit assumption made by many researchers that the father's interaction is most important for young children. If this is truely the case, it seems necessary to consider whether male teachers in primary grades would actually be functioning as extensions of the father. Perhaps the father-child relationship is too personal and unique for this to happen. On the other hand, perhaps the more important factor is the presence of at least some male model (father or not) in the young child's life.

A,T Ed 8 Yarrow, M. Problems of method in parent-child research. Child Development, 1963, 34, 215-236.

In this article, the author points out the great discrepancy which exists between the sophistication of theory in this area and empirical findings which often rest on very shaky sources of evidence. In considering the issue of research strategy, Yarrow presents the courses of action traditionally decided upon by investigators. First of all, one can abandon complexity entirely and work with simpler laboratory variables in the hopes that these might distantly approximate the actual process of socialization; secondly, one can decide to acknowledge complexity (which Yarrow states is the usual approach) and attempt to interview and question subjects to determine what is going on in their interaction as well as the effects of their interaction. At this point, Yarrow questions the validity of such procedures on several grounds. First of all, subjects' responses may be influenced by particular needs and defenses, values about behavior, social class identification, etc. Secondly, the interviewed subject in many studies is the mother and no one else. Yarrow uses examples of psychiatric work with patients and their families to illustrate the fact that there are often extreme differences in perception of family dynamics by different family members.

In concluding this article, Yarrow calls for "co-ordinated research", which is described as the use of combined methods from laboratory experiments and natural (observer) and quasi-natural (interviewer) settings. The author suggests that the advantage to this type of method is that it may sensitize the researcher to possibilities which his/her favorite method had not previously illuminated.

The focus of this article's content is to observe the ways in which researchers observe and describe parent-child interaction. The thought behind this discussion is wide-reaching, involving a questioning of methodology rather than assuming it as a given. Of course, at some point researchers must state their methodology and proceed from there to other questions, but the significance of beginning presumptions is always basic to the study; these things will determine what outcomes can result.

E 16 Barbe, W. B. A study of the family background of the gifted. Journal of Educational Psychology, May 1956, 47, 302-309.

This study was on 456 high school students who scored 120 or higher on the Stanford-Binet and were graduates from a special program for high ability students in a public high school. The data was accumulated over a 15 year time period.

Barbe looked at economic background (mainly upper middle class), parent or guardian (87.5% of the children were reared by both their parents), education of parent (parents of high-ability group showed a higher educational level than did the parents of low-ability or normal-ability groups), marital status (88% still living together), and occupation level of parents (mostly professional men).

This study left out the large segment of the population that was attending parochial schools. It differentiated between economic level, education, and occupation when they were directly related. The study looked at percentages in the population of gifted students, but did not compare these figures with the similar percentages in the total population.

E Baron, F. Travels in search of new latitudes for innovation. In C. W. Taylor (Ed.), Climate for creativity. New York: Pergamon, 1972. Pp. 49-62.

A well-designed bit of research investigating the importance of heredity in scores on standard creativity tests. Gave a battery of psychological tests for potential-creativity to medically documented pairs of monozygotic (same genes) and dizygotic (different genes) 16-18 year-old twins in Italy.

The percent of the variation which could be accounted for by heredity alone varied with the exact creative ability being tested: 78% for adaptive flexibility, 75% for expressional fluency, 55% for preference-for-complexity, and for ideational fluency and originality such contradictory results that heredity seemed unimportant.

A neat, simple series of experiments which, if substantiated by other researchers, goes a long way toward explaining why there are such low correlations found between many family-influence variables and scores on potential-creativity tests. Perhaps the father's (and mother's) major contribution to creativity is simple genetic heredity. However, this still leaves from 22% to 100% of various creative abilities still unexplained.

E 8 Biller, H. B., Singer, D. L., & Fullerton, M. Sex-role development and creative potential in kindergarten-age boys. Developmental Psychology, 1969, 1, 291-296.

These authors studied 35 five-year-old white upper-lower to upper-middle class boys in a North Carolina urban-surburban private kindergarten. They measured sex-role patterns by Brown's It Scale, Biller's Draw-a-Person test, Toy Selection, and Game Selection; and they measured

creativity potential by Wallach and Kogan's 1965 test of divergent thinking.

They found a correlation of .36 between creativity and mixed sex-role patterns, with the most creative boys showing a low It or Draw-a-Person scores combined with a high tendency to choose masculine toys and games. Since other studies suggest the importance of the father in the development of his son's sex-role patterns, this suggests that the father fostering androgyny in his son is also fostering creativity.

My main qualms about this study center around the oddness of the traits selected by most masculinity tests, which seem to measure rigidity and restrictiveness of appropriate behavior, almost a fear of looking silly, rather than true masculinity. If true, then naturally lack of rigidity, of conventionality, and of fear of being different would correlate positively with creativity, since they are different forms of the same trait. Secondly, I am sorry they did not also test girls, since I would expect creative children of both sexes to prefer the "masculine" action-packed toys--but I do not know if this prediction is true.

E 5 Datta, L. E., & Parloff, M. B. On the relevance of autonomy: Parent-child relationships and early scientific creativity. Proceedings, 75th Annual Convention, American Psychological Association, 1967, 75, 149-150.

Creative adults have reported feeling respect rather than intense closeness or affection for their parents, and claim family flexibility in permitting exploratory activities, therefore the authors of this paper hypothesized that it is autonomy (not affection) which is related to the development of scientific creativity.

To test this, they administered a 29 scale, 312 item questionnaire to 1039 high school senior competitors in the Westinghouse Science Talent Search who scored above the 80th percentile, subdividing these test subjects into "high" and "other" creativity groups on the basis of experts' judgments of their submitted science projects. As expected, they found higher levels of autonomy and lower levels of enforcement of rules in the high creativity group, and they found that the fathers' attitudes were slightly more important than the mothers'.

There were two major flaws in this study. First, the parent-child relationships were measured only in terms of the child's perception and memory of what had happened routinely in the past. Second, the test subjects often mentioned the lack of fit between their home situations and the questions asked. For example, the question "Do they punish you if you break the rules?", is difficult to answer because the subject says there were no clear overt rules, that the parents "allowed me as much responsibility and freedom as they felt I could handle...I felt I was trusted". This is an important criticism which might help account for the rather low correlation between measured family interaction patterns and measurements on creativity tests, assuming that family influences really are highly important in the development of creativity skills.

E 5,3 Dewing, K., & Taft, R. Some characteristics of the parents of creative twelve-year-olds. Journal of Personality, 1973, 41, 71-85.

Parental data questionnaires were given to preselected groups of high creativity test scorers in the 7th grades of 10 Australian schools, and the answers compared to those received from a control group within the same schools (lower creativity, but similar IQ). These tests apparently were set up to retest Getzels and Jackson's famous study of high IQ Chicago students, but to include a more normal range of IQ's.

As is usual with such studies, most of the questions concerned mother-child relationships. From the viewpoint of fathers' influence, the only noteworthy finding of this study was that fathers of the creative children were more apt to recall solitary activities from their own childhoods, with a .01 significance level for boys and a much lower (but still positive) correlation for girls.

The title of this paper suggests a study of both parents, but the data collected focuses on the mother. Then the conclusions were generalized as though applying to both parents.

E 5 Dryer, A. S., & Wells, M. B. Parental values, parental control, and creativity in young children. Journal of Marriage, 1966, 28, 83-88.

Torrence's creativity-potential tests were administered to 25 four-to-five-year-old university preschool children. Separate questionnaires were also completed by each mother and father, covering socio-economic class, child-rearing practices, and importance of tasks attitudes.

Fathers of creative children put less-than-usual emphasis on companionship, moral unity, or religious unity. Both parents showed an unusually stubborn, easily angered, easily hurt, irritable, moody, self-centered, and responsible. Consensus of opinions was less common than expected. The authors suggested that perhaps these parents are more open about expressing socially undesirable feelings, and do not particularly value calmness and peace.

All the above correlations between parental traits and child creativity were at the .05 level of significance, suggesting that they are supportive but not sufficient causes. Also the above traits only show how these parents view themselves and each other, not how an outside observer would see them.

E 2,3 Galton, F. Hereditary genius. Cleveland: World, (1869), 1962.

Classical book on the origins of giftedness, written in the leisurely style of Darwin's more famous books. Galton invented and used biometry (measured correlations) to analyze the genealogies of men of eminence in England: judges, naval commanders, literary men, scientists, poets, wrestlers, divines, and musicians.

His three main conclusions were: (1) the basic prerequisites for eminence are intellect, zeal, and power of work; (2) these are her-

editary since they run in families and since they regress back toward the average in succeeding generations; and (3) men of genius do not produce enough children to meet the replacement rate.

This book is invaluable as a trend-setter for later researchers. However Galton overlooked the possible influences of the family upon the maturing child, hence assumed that "runs in families" means "hereditary".

E 2 Getzels, J. W., & Jackson, P. W. Creativity and intelligence: Explorations with gifted students. New York: Wiley, 1962.

Fascinating book which gives a gut feeling for "creativity" in a variety of ways, such as the very short story written by a high creativity student about a man whose wife's "head would skid across the pillow and hit him in the head", so he divorced her, and "is now contemplating a new skid-proof face cream". (p. 39)

This is a comprehensive study of differences between high-creativity and high-IQ students (grades 6-12) in an upper middle-class private school in the Chicago area. The high IQ subjects were those students (17 boys, 11 girls) with IQ scores in the upper 20th percentile, but creativity scores below the 20th percentile level. Similarly, high-creativity students were those in less than the top 20th percentile IQ scores, but in this upper 20th percentile in creativity measures.

A classic which has influenced all creativity research since then. Its major defects are that the authors (1) studied only high IQ subjects (average IQ was 132), (2) they used the usual mixture of creativity and divergent-thinking tests which Wallach later showed were often simply measuring IQ from another angle, and (3) they studied home environmental influences from the view of the mother's traits rather than the father's.

E 9 Helson, R. Woman mathematicians and the creative personality. Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 1971, 36, 210-220.

Traditionally there have been fewer creative women in the math and science fields than would be expected by their representation in the total population, so it is of interest to measure how these few creative women vary from the norm.

A wide variety of tests were given to 44 women mathematicians rated highly for creativity by other mathematicians in their fields, and these results were compared to those of other women Ph.D.'s in math.

The main findings were that these creative women had simplified their lives and restricted their interests mainly to intellectual activities. In relation to their fathers, all this author found was that these women seldom had brothers, and that 2/3 of their fathers

were poor professionals. This suggests that perhaps these women had identified with their fathers, and were the only children available to carry on the fathers' ambitions in the next generation.

However, it is easily argued that the control group of female math Ph.D.'s probably were also high in potential creativity, or they would never have deviated so far from the standard female roles. And perhaps the critical father-influence question was never asked.

E 7,9,11 Honzik, M. P. Prediction of differential abilities at age 18 from the early family environment. Proceedings, 75th Annual Convention, APA, 1967, 75, 151-152.

The author looked for correlations between family variables influencing a young child and whether he would later score higher on the verbal or the performance section of an IQ test. The family variables were observed via interview and home visits when the child was 21 months old; and the IQ test was administered at age 18 years.

Some of the observed family variables did correlate (mostly at the .05 level) with the direction of the child's intellectual development. Boys tended to develop higher verbal ability scores when the mothers were pleased with the fathers' occupation (r = .44), when the fathers were poorly adjusted socially (r = .28) or were interested in home (r = .28). Girls tended to show higher verbal competency when the relationship between their mothers and fathers were close (4 = .29), friendly (r = .34), and affectionate (4 = .27). However, higher performance scores did not correlate significantly with any of the father variables measured.

The general conclusion seems to be that verbalization practice pays off, that children learn higher levels of verbal competency when they live in a friendly home where both parents are around and talking. But the low levels of correlations found suggests also that such a home environment is only an aid and stimulus, not a necessary condition for the development of verbal skills, and that there are many other untested ways to achieve the same end results by age 18.

One major flaw of this paper is inevitable: the initial observations of family influences was done at least 16 years prior to publication, so no later than 1951, and therefore no measurements were made of the types of interactions occuring between the father and child.

E 10,18 Kahl, J. A. Educational and occupational aspirations of "common man" boys. Harvard Education Review, 1953, 23, 186-203.

This interview study is aimed at exploring the social influences which help to account for differences in motivation among high school boys of similar background and intelligence level. It looks at 24 boys of working class families: 12 are planning to attend college, 12 are not.

In families where the fathers showed limited educational aspirations and were content with their way of life, high ability boys were less apt to consider going to college than boys of high ability in families where the fathers were concerned about education and were discontent with their way of life.

The methodology in this was good. After a pilot study in which a questionnaire was distributed and found lacking, the investigator used a series of interviews to develop case studies on these particular boys, and then tried to identify trends within the case studies. This exploratory approach allows the investigator to discover new factors, rather than being limited by a written questionnaire format.

P 23 Langeman, S. K. How to be a good father to a gifted child. Popular Science, March 1957, 170, 103-105, 244, 246, 248.

This article deals with two major items. The first is how to identify if your child is gifted. The areas they considered are: IQ, vocabulary, physical characteristics, mental and social attitudes, and diverse interests.

The second area was what the father can do to assist in the development of the gifted child. They discuss the need to be supportive and understanding, the need to challenge the child but not to push too hard, to model appropriate adult behaviors, the need not to be over-protective, to be a firm disciplinarian, and to encourage him/her to write and develop communication skills other than just verbal.

This article is vague in the area of how to identify a gifted and talented child. It gave few concrete examples about what to look for. In the second area, the qualities that they said the father should possess are qualities that later parental research identified as being important.

E 2,6,11 MacKinnon, D. W. The nature and nurture of creative talent. In W. B. Barbe & J. S. Renzulli (Eds.), Psychology and education of the gifted (2nd ed.). New York: Irvington Publishers, 1975. Pp. 151-167.

This article theorized what the parent of a highly gifted child would be like. He saw parents characterized as having extraordinary respect for the child and confidence in his/her ability to do what was appropriate. There was a lack of intense closeness between the child and the parent (more often with respect to the father than the mother).

There was a tendency on the child's part to identify either with both parents or with neither. The father presented a model of effective and resourceful behavior in an exceptionally demanding career, and the mother was very autonomous.

This article is an excellent overview on the relationships between the parent and the creative child.

E 6,11 Nelson, E. A., & Maccoby, E. E. The relationship between social development and differential abilities on the scholastic aptitude test. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1966, 12, 269-289.

These authors hypothesized that a feminized pattern of verbal versus math IQ scores (higher in verbal skills) is due to an unusually close relationship with one's mother. To test this, they collected data on almost 2000 entering Stanford freshmen, then correlated their SAT score patterns with questions about family structure, parental practices, parent-child relationships, and peer relationships.

The female students showed remarkably little parental effect. The male students showed more, with higher verbal scores if the father was dead or frequently gone from home (but not if separated or divorced). if the son had been a "Daddy's boy", or if he had feared his father; and a higher math score if he had been punished by the father, or if he talked to the father often. Therefore these findings were in agreement with the authors' hypothesis.

However, all these were significant at the .05 level only. Again it seems that these factors have a rather low influence on actual behavior, accounting for only about 10% of the real variance in performance. Also, the family data was obtained from questionnaires answered by the freshmen, so really measures their perception and memories only.

E 2 Terman, L. M., & Oden, M. H. The genetic study of genius, Vol. V: The gifted group at mid-life. California: Stanford University Press, 1959.

This book is fifth in a series of published accounts of a longitudinal study of high-IQ (140 and up) children who attended large public schools in California in 1920. It summarizes all earlier studies, then describes later findings on the now about 44-year-old test subjects. Techniques used include IQ tests, questionnaires, school record examinations, doctor's examinations, and interviews.

General conclusions: high IQ individuals tend to be healthy, successful in life, produce fewer than the average number of offspring, show Galton's expected drift toward normalcy in their offspring's IQ's, and come from high IQ families themselves.

This is another pioneering trend-setting author. Terman's studies made "gifted" synonomous with "high-IQ" in the minds of most people until well into the 1950's. Unfortunately he (1) failed to separate "running in families" from "genetically inherited", (2) depended upon teachers' selections of the three brightest students in their classes to be his test subjects, and (3) did not sufficiently emphasize that he was studying only one of many types of giftedness.

E 2,24 Wallach, M. A. Creativity. In P. Mussen (Ed.), Carmichael's manual of child psychology. 1970. Pp. 1211-1272.

Extensive, comprehensive, exhaustive review of studies of creativity up to the date of publication. Excellent review of the literature.

General conclusions: (1) creativity is a separate ability showing zero correlation with IQ (in normal or above-normal IQ ranges); (2) creativity tests are a mixed bag, many haveing a higher correlation with IQ measures than with other creativity measures; (3) ideational

fluency is the major divergent-thinking ability which shows a zero correlation with convergent-thinking tests (including IQ tests).

Much, much else in this long review. To be read if you are interested in creativity measures. Unfortunately, has nothing to say specifically about the father's influence on the development of his children's creativity.

E 9,10 Weisberg, P. S., & Springer, K. J. Home environmental factors in creative functioning: A study of gifted children. Archives of General Psychiatry, 1961, 5, 554-564.

Thirty-two families of children who scored in the top 50 out of 7000 in the Kuhlman-Andersen creativity test were interviewed. Both of the parents had to be part of the family, and were interviewed individually with emphasis on the marriage, family pattern, and attitudes toward the particular child in the study.

They found that parents who were expressive but did not dominate often had creative children. Parents who understood that at times children regress in their development and supported them during this period had creative children. Fathers of high ranking children tended to have greater intensity in their relationship (this is not necessarily true in the mother) and had occupational autonomy. They also had a positive self-concept. Both parents were open to new ideas on the part of the child.

The good parts of the study used a variety of measures to assess creativity and looked at various forms of creativity (idea fluency, flexibility, originality) in selecting the creative children. A training program for the interviewers was done so they had an understanding of what things they were supposed to assess.

E 16 Wertz, C. E., & Watley, D. J. Paternal influence of talent development. Journal of Counseling Psychology, 1972, 19(5), 367-373.

A sample of college freshmen (N = 127, 125) were grouped by father's occupation. Fathers occupations were then compared in terms of the probability of the sons and daughters having attained various types of achievements--scientific, artistic, oral, leadership, musical, and literary--in high school.

The results suggest that fathers directly and/or indirectly encourage their sons to develop specific skills which the father himself had acquired. They also suggest that the structure of a community may channel children's talents in certain directions.

There are a number of methodological problems that arise in a study of this kind. The major one is inadequate or irrelevant categorization of the fathers' occupation. A second is the biased sampling of college students, resulting in range restrictions.

II. THE FATHERING EXPERIENCE

A. BIOLOGICAL/PHYSIOLOGICAL

Buchholz

Kuhlow

Ventura

Cranley

E 25,11 21 Estes, R. D., & Goddard, J. Prey selection and hunting behavior of the African wild dog. Journal of Wildlife Management, 1967, 31(1), 52-70.

Although this article, as the title states, is concerned with prey selection and hunting, the sections on pack composition and social organization relate several observations of interest to the student of paternal behaviors.

In the packs observed by the authors there appeared to be no indication of rank order apart from the position of leader which was held by both males and females. The mother was not essential to the survival of the young beyond the first few weeks because all pack members contributed to their feeding and protection. In one pack consisting of 1 female and 5 males, the female died 5 weeks postpartum leaving 8 males and 1 female pup. They were raised by the 5 males who fed them by regurgitation until they were old enough to run with the pack.

As in all animal literature, this article cannot be used to draw conclusions concerning human behavior. It is just another example of an instance in the animal kingdom in which males exhibit ability to raise young.

E 2(25) Etkin, W. Social behavior and organization among vertebrates. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1964.

The information in this book most pertinent to the topic of a biological basis for fathering is Etkin's suggestion that maternal ('parental') behavior may be influenced by endocrine secretions. He reports that the injection of the hormone prolactin into roosters causes them to show parental behavior toward young chicks. After reviewing the effects of hormones on various other animals he emphasizes that "the pattern of behavior induced by various hormones may vary significantly in different kinds of animals, sometimes even in animals fairly closely related to each other". This observation is consistent with that of most writers on the subject of paternal behavior in animals who almost invariably remark on the great variety of adult male to infant interactions throughout the animal kingdom.

A section on sexual dimorphism brings up the interesting point that among birds the infant caretaker has the least display potential while the mate who has least responsibility for the young shows the most elaborate development of conspicuous feathers. This holds true regardless of whether the male or female cares for the young. In birds where the care is nearly equally divided, the males and females look more closely alike.

As with most books on social behavior and organization in animals (or in humans for that matter), there is no section exclusively devoted to "father", however, if you have necessary endurance you can pick tidbits out here and there throughout the book.

E 25,11 Fisher, A. E. Chemical stimulation of the brain. Scientific American, 1964, 210(6), 60-68.

Fisher reports on his research in which he injected testosterone into specific sites in the hypothalamus of male rats. The response was very specific to the location of the site. If placed in the center of the brain just in front of the hypothalamus, the male rat would build a nest and care for the retrieve pups placed with him. If the injection was placed to one side rather than in the center, the behavior elicited was typical male sexual behavior (i.e., mounting). This occurred in female as well as male rats and was elicited only by testosterone, not by any other chemicals or by electrical stimulation.

Fisher offers the following reasoning as a possible explanation of these results. "Testosterone is known to act not only as a male hormone but also, under appropriate circumstances, as a weak substitute for the female hormone progesterone, which is linked to pregnancy and maternal behavior. The male body contains little or no progesterone, and presumably its circulating testosterone, at normal levels, has no progestational potency. But when a concentration of testosterone is injected into cells that are susceptible to progestational stimulation, the hormone's secondary activity is strong enough to stimulate them." Thus he feels that the male and female brains are identical in that they both contain cells that can direct male behavior and cells that direct female behavior. The behavior elicited depends on the hormones that enter the animal's circulatory system. This is interesting in light of the evidence that the presence or absence of hormones during early life may determine the extent to which these cells function thus determining degrees of maleness or femaleness by altering the response threshholds of these cells.

T,E,C Guyton, A. C. Textbook of Medical Physiology (4th ed.). Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders, 1971.

Basic reference test in human physiology. Chapter 77 deals specifically with male reproductive functions. Other areas of the body are dealt with throughout the book.

E Harlow, H. F. Learning to love. New York: Balantine Books, 1971.

Limited studies of primates by Harlow, and others discussed by him, of the "paternal affectional system" and variables which affect it suggest limited biological variables and maximal experiential variables. Absence of innate paternal potential indicates the paternal affectional system was not intended to serve an essential biological function. It frequently does serve a secondary protective function. Harlow's style and wit make this an exceptionally painless way to acquire a thorough overview of his classic research.

E Hott, C. Males and females. Harmondsworth, England: Penguine Books, 1972.

The author represents her own studies as well as citations of

others which emphasize hormonal and neurological differences between sexes. For example, she attempts to demonstrate that "observable relative aggressiveness of males" is biologically determined.

Some physiological studies do not consider effects of differential rearing patterns as a factor influencing both the variable being tested (e.g., aggressiveness) and the outcomes. For example, boys raised in an atmosphere which encourages sports will tend to be more muscular because of the opportunities for development.

E Kinsey, Pomeroy, & Martin. Sexual behavior in the human male. Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders Company, 1949.

The original study of human sexuality throughout the life span using careful research and documentation characterizes this work as a pioneering effort. Although the data from Kinsey's reports are legitimately questioned from a variety of points of view it was an important beginning and the foundation work for the later Masters and Johnson studies.

E 25,7, 11 Kummer, H. Social organizations of Hamadryas baboons. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1968.

This book is a report of a field study that was carried out in Ethiopia from November 1960 to October 1961. The researcher's purpose was to formulate hypotheses on the function of behaviors and grouping tendencies in the entire organization. Kummer and his assistant avoided hiding places and howed themselves as openly as possible in order to allow the baboons to become accustomed to the humans. This did allow for good observation, however, it also protected "the animals from predators since those kept further away from us than did the baboons." This factor may indeed bring into question the normalacy of the observed behaviors.

The subadult and young adult male-infant interactions appear to progress in three separate stages which Kummer feels "may be the ontogenetical and evolutionary raw material of the hamadryas one-male unit. The earliest form of "maternal" behavior occurs when the subadult males who do not lead a one-male unit "kidnap" black infants of both sexes from their mothers and play with them for periods up to 30 minutes. The second form of "maternal" behavior by these males occurs when a mother dies. A subadult male without a unit will adopt and care for the infant rather than this being done by another female or a unit leader. Infants of both sexes are adopted. The third behavior is that which finally establishes the male's unit. The young male appropriates (without cesure) a juvenile female from another unit and takes her as his own. However, the female at this age is not sexually receptive and no sexual behavior takes place, rather the behavior is that of a "mother-child" type relationship. He handles her as her own mother would. Kummer feels that this progression of behavior establishes the stable male-female bond which sexual motivation alone fails to create in baboons.

T 2(25) Lynn, E. B. (Ed.) Paternal behavior in other animals and early man. The father: His role in child development. Monterey, CA: Brooks/Cole Publishing Company, 1974.

This chapter gives a very brief overview of research done on paternal behavior of primates. Acknowledging that it would be naive to make direct generalizations from other animals to humans, Lynn suggests that the value of animal research is to help formulate hypotheses about humans. We must then move on to human research in order to formulate conclusions about human paternal behavior.

This chapter also contains a brief discussion of the evolution of the parental-family system. He feels that "there is good reason to believe that the human male's establishment in the family is biologically founded in the nature of the species rather than being merely an ill-fitting social convention." Unfortunately this section has extremely minimal documentation leading the reader to be somewhat less firmly convinced of the conclusions than the author.

While this chapter is quite brief and shallow, Lynn's approach does offer a good framework (especially the questions for human research he poses) for conceptualizing the biological basis of fathering. Therefore, one might find this a good starting point to further study the subject.

T 2(25, 24,7) Maccoby, E. E., & Jacklin, C. N. The psychology of sex differences. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1974.

This very readable book consists of an assemblage of a large body of evidence concerning how the sexes differ, how they are similar, and many aspects of psychological functioning. It is very research oriented, citing studies to support almost all statements. The authors have concentrated mainly on research done since 1966 and offer a very extensive annotated bibliography and summary tables of data. In the introduction there is an excellent section, "The Nature of the Evidence", in which the authors explore the methodological problems encountered in this type of research. References to fathering are scattered throughout the book, although one gets the feeling that, unlike most other sources, this is for organization convenience rather than a lack of commitment to fathers. When mothering behavior is mentioned, in whatever context, fathering behavior is usually also discussed. There is, however, a section on nurturing others, within Chapter 6, "Social Approach-Avoidance".

After a brief review of the animal literature, the authors sum up with the most important points to be derived from the behavior of mammals other than man. While "maternal" behavior is to some degree hormonally controlled, hormones are not necessary for its appearance. Exposure to the young will elicit maternal behavior in virgin females and males. In the males of some species, aggression interferes with responsiveness to the young. The great variability in the degree of male participation in caring for the young among subhuman primates is noted. The behavior of preadolescent and young subadults in relation to infants is predictive of the child-care functions that the two sexes will perform in adulthood.

From this last point the authors go into research on humans. While noting Parke's work with adult male-newborn interaction, they emphasize the lack of research on child-infant interaction which would be from child to adulthood. Most of the research has been done with children and dolls. The authors offer two main thoughts on this. "In studies of interest in dolls, it might be well to determine to what extent the play with dolls is actually nurturant. While children do hug and tuck dolls into bed, they also act out fantasies such as surgery or death wishes. Their second and even more pertinent point is that we need to do studies offering young boys and girls a live infant (human or animal) to care for under controlled conditions and systematic observation.

E Masters, W. H., & Johnson, V. E. Human sexual response. Boston: Little, Brown, & Company, 1966.

Detailed physiologic research on the physiology of the sexual response. Provides the basis for understanding and teaching the physical aspects of the sex act.

The most effective clinical use of this material requires that it be put into the broad context of sexuality and its meaning for ultimate human relationships.

T Mitchell, G. D. Paternalistic behavior in primates. Psychological Bulletin, 25,11 1969, 71, 399-417.

This extensive literature review brings together the knowledge (to its date) regarding adult male primate interactions with infants and juveniles. It is presented in the order of placement in the primate order from tree shrews to apes. The author points out that this organization is for convenience and does not indicate that "paternalistic behavior increases in complexity or frequency between prosimians and the pongidal". After the review the author offers a list of experimental factors which appear to affect paternalistic behavior. These factors provide a framework for future experimentation on primate paternalistic behavior.

This article would be an excellent starting point for one interested in pursuing the subject. While the author unfortunately states only the conclusions of the research reviewed (offering no comment on the quality), he does give a very extensive list of references which would allow one to search out further sources.

E Rosenblatt, J. Nonhormonal basis of maternal behavior in the rat. Science, 25,11 1967, 156, 1512-1514.

Rats were tested for induction of maternal behavior by exposing them to young pups continuously for 10-15 days. Nonpregnant intact, ovariectomized, and hypophysectomized females were studied, as well as intact and castrated males. Measures of maternal behavior studied

were retrieving, crouching over the young (as in nursing), licking and nest building.

All the groups displayed maternal behavior. Although in the male groups smaller percentages displayed the different items of maternal behavior, the only significant difference between males and females was in respect to nest building. The two groups of males did not themselves differ, however. All groups had a latency of over 5 days before the onset of maternal behavior. There was no significant difference in latency between males and females.

Although this study obviously cannot be generalized to human males, it certainly does point to appropriate avenues of human research. It also tends to lend credence to Heinz's statement about the nature instinct to father being suppressed in our culture. Maybe if our men had more instead of less exposure to babies, they too would display more parenting behaviors.

T 25 Rypma, C. B. Biological base of the paternal response. The Family Coordinator, 1976, 25(4), 335-339.

This paper reviews studies of paternal behavior in various animal species. While most reviews in the field tend to stick mainly to primates with occasional references to wolves or dogs, this paper is interesting in that it relates information about paternal behavior in insects, fish, toads, and birds in addition to mammals.

The author states that the thesis of his paper is that "similarities of paternal behavior observed across cultures may be indicative of biological (e.g., hormonal) participants, whereas cultural differences may be viewed as learned responses resulting from social adaptations." Unfortunately he never mentions any cross cultural data at all let alone similarities or differences. While the animal data is interesting, the human discussion is merely a very brief rehash of Lynn and Biller and Meredith.

E 2(25) Southwick, C. H. (Ed.) Primate social behavior. Princeton, NJ: D. Van Nostrand Company, Inc., 1963.

Except for the Itani article (which is listed separately in this bibliography), the articles in this little book mention paternal behavior only in passing; maybe a line here, a paragraph there. However, this book is very quick, easy reading which gives the reader many ideas for follow-up reading. Many of the articles are often referenced in literature reviews of more recent vintage books and articles and thus this book offers a nice concise source for original research.

T 4 Antle, K. Psychologic involvement in pregnancy by expectant fathers. JOGN Nursing, 1975, 4(4), 40-42.

The author begins her paper by commenting on the lack of research regarding the father's experience during pregnancy, and the factors involved in his transition to a parental role. She does not feel that family centered maternity care can be fully achieved until a better understanding of the father's role is achieved thru research. States that the expectant father is currently relied on for emotional support for his wife, yet he may have unrecognized needs which may inhibit him in this task.

The paper is exploratory in nature, based on literature review, and professional contacts with expectant couples. The areas the author suggests that need exploring are as follows; paternal role and role transition, concerns and emotions specific to the father, "feeling pregnant" may correlate with "feeling fatherly" postpartum, and father's emotional state may underlie physical symptoms.

The article is aimed at nurses and suggests that they should begin to ask more questions and to do more research regarding the father's role, and that they should use this research along with that of other disciplines to improve their care of expectant fathers.

T,E 4 Arnstein, H. S. The crisis of becoming a father. Sexual Behavior, April 1972, 42-48.

This paper is critical of the lack of attention given to expectant fathers in literature, and of the jokes which are prevalent about them. To support the fact that expectant fatherhood is no laughing matter, the author summarizes a number of recent studies which indicate that pregnancy is a time of stress for the father.

The studies summarized are; Trethowan's investigation of physical symptoms in expectant father's, Curtis's study of psychosomatic symptoms, and Hartman's study of sexual behavior in expectant fathers. Ancient rituals and mythology such as "couvade" (the experience of labor pains by a husband during his wife's confinement) and gods giving birth are sighted as possible examples of man's unconscious envy of female procreativity. These ancient rituals and ceremonies possibly served man as an outlet to bothersome emotions, however, civilized man does not have these outlets, therefore, his negative feelings are expressed in physical and psychological symptoms. The author, also, discusses sexual relations as a source of anxiety and conflict for the expectant fathers and gives examples from the research of Masters and Johnson.

The author concludes that much of the evidence indicates that anxieties experienced by expectant fathers could be reduced by open communication between husband and wife. The author does not suggest any clinical approaches which may help improve husband-wife communication, but does suggest the pregnant wife indicate to her husband her belief in him as a man and a human being as well as a father.

C 25 Babies have fathers too. American Journal of Nursing, 1971, 71(10), 1980-1981.

Briefly summarizes a program of family-centered maternity care at Mercy Hospital in Miami, Florida, which includes the father as an active participant in the birth process. If they have attended prenatal classes, fathers may be in attendance in the delivery room. Fathers are not restricted to regular visiting hours on postpartum, but are welcomed from 8:00 a.m. to 9:00 p.m. After washing their hands and putting on a gown, fathers may hold their newborns. The article points out that the baby becomes accustom to the father's normal bacteria before leaving the hospital. The article mentions that despite the availability of other maternity units which are located closer to the residences of young childbearing couples, the number of deliveries at Mercy have increased since instituting this program. Perhaps this reflects consumer desires.

T 4,25 Bradley, R. A. Father's presence in delivery rooms. Psychosomatics, 1962, 3(6), 474-479.

Based on eight years of experience in over 4000 deliveries, the author enthusiastically advocates the inclusion of husbands in delivery rooms. States that in view of the new trend towards prepared childbirth with the demand of patients for conscious, natural, spontaneous deliveries, the practice of excluding the father from the delivery should be re-evaluated.

The reasons sighted for including the father in the delivery room are: husbands like it, wives like it, husbands are needed as labor coaches, husbands save doctors and nurses time, prepared couples recognize subjectives signs of labor progression, reducing need for rectal and vaginal exams, delivery is the most comfortable and joyful part of labor, husband can take first picture of baby with mom, decreases the incidence of postpartum psychosis, reduces anxiety in wives, shortens the length of hospital stay, and betters hospital public relations.

The author states he has not found the general objections to fathers in the delivery room to be so. They have not gotten in the way, fainted, or increased infection rates. In fact, he states that infection rates are lower. The practice has not led to malpractice suits, and the author feels parents should learn of a deformity together, right at the time of birth.

Comment: Perhaps Dr. Bradley would have had his theory and practice better received by his colleagues if he had presented it with empirical data documenting his claims. He does give approximate numbers and percentages, but quantitative, and qualitative data might have been more appropriate.

T,C 4 Bradley, R. A. Husband-coached childbirth. New York: Harper & Row, 1965.

T 25 Chiota, B. J., Goolkasian, P., & Ladewig, P. Effects of separation from spouse on pregnancy, labor, and delivery, and the postpartum period. JOGN Nursing, 1976, 5(1), 21-23.

The article discusses the additional stress experienced by a woman during pregnancy, labor, and delivery, and post-partum when she is separated from her husband. Three kinds of separation are given: (1) job separation such as military duty and work related trips; (2) separation of wife and husband during labor and delivery because of hospital policy; and (3) psychological separations due to breakdown of communications between husband and wife.

Only the work related separation is elaborated on in this article. It emphasizes the importance of the nurse in providing a supportive role to the pregnant women whose husband is absent. It is too bad the authors did not discuss the other two types of separation. Nurses could be active in aleviating these separations. They can advocate and assist in hospital policy change. They can, also, help to improve husband-wife communications thru prenatal classes, and referrals to other disciplines when indicated.

T 4,25 Coleman, A. D., & Coleman, L. L. Pregnancy as an altered state of consciousness. Birth and the Family Journal, 1973-74, 1(1), 7-11.

Discusses the term altered state of consciousness as defined by Charles T. Tart as an alteration in the overall patterning of mental functioning. The authors describe pregnancy as a condition which produces an altered state of consciousness. Although the article is mainly about pregnant women, it does make reference to the expectant father. The fact that expectant fathers experience parallel psychological changes is seen as evidence that these changes cannot be totally attributed to the hormones of pregnancy. Anxieties in pregnant fathers are created by the mothers' evaluations of them as fathers. Pregnant women often become hypercritical of their husbands during their pregnancies. Also, the father is faced with watching his wife change from lover to mother while at the same time confronting themselves as fathers.

E 25 Cronenwett, L. R., & Newark, L. L. Fathers' responses to childbirth. Nursing Research, 1974, 23(3), 210-217.

This is a research study which examines the effect of childbirth education and attendance in the delivery room has on the father. One-hundred fifty-two fathers responded to a 28 item, Likert-type questionnaire following the birth of their infants. These fathers were divided into three groups: prepared attenders, unprepared attenders, and non-attenders. The null hypotheses are: father in the delivery room has no effect on development of paternal-child relations, preparation of the father has no effect on development of paternal child relationships, presence of father in delivery room has no effect on his relationship with his mate, preparation of the father will have no effect on his

relationship with his mate, presence of father in the delivery room has no effect on his perception of childbirth as a positive experience, preparation of the father has no effect on his perception of childbirth as a positive emotional experience. Results: there were no measurable differences in paternal-child relationships, both preparation and birth attendance, and non-preparation birth attendance had a positive influence on couple relationship, and attenders at delivery regardless of preparation perceived childbirth as a more positive experience than nonattenders.

The authors state the results regarding paternal-child relationships could be due to the fact that this relationship is in such an early stage of development one to two days after delivery that it is impossible to measure or that questionnaire statements were phrased in emotional tones which are difficult for men to relate and suggest future study in this area. Other observations and comments: less educated fathers had more positive responses to child-related items than college educated fathers, there was a 40% less incidence of regional anesthesia in wives of prepared fathers and a 26% greater incidence of labors shorter than ten hours in the prepared group.

The authors point out that their study did not deter psychological differences and this area should be further studied. They ask the question of whether the same results would be achieved with mandatory education. Their overall conclusions are that couples should be prepared for the childbirth experience and that husbands should be allowed in delivery rooms.

E 4 Curtis, J. L. A psychiatric study of 55 expectant fathers. U.S. Armed Forces Medical Journal, 1955, 6(7), 937-950.

The purpose of this study is to look at the emotional responses of men to expectant fatherhood. Data was obtained through psychiatric screening, personality inventory, review of visits made to sick call, and efficiency reports on duty performance. Fifty-five men were divided into three groups. Group A contained 17 men who had serious problems, Group B was composed of 14 men with minor problems. Group C were 24 expectant fathers who had not sought or been referred for psychiatric consultation.

Results: Most of the men in Group A had a previous life history of impulsive behavior or schizoid personality. They presented with serious psychiatric problems. Common problems were: depressive reactions with two attempted suicides, ulcerative colitis, and severe passive aggressive or overtly defiant behavior. Seven were expecting illegitimate offspring, and fifteen were openly rejective of the expected baby. Group B had clinical problems which consisted of transient or mild psychoneurotic or psychosomatic disorders which responded to brief psychotherapy. About half had a slight reduction in duty efficiency or made requests for transfer. Eleven had ambivalent or openly rejecting attitudes towards the expected baby or their

wives. In Group C one third were found to have no significant clinical problems, one third had problems similar to Group B, and one third had problems similar to Group B but lesser in nature. From a review of clinical findings it was concluded that Group A were unable to form helpful or stable identifications as "good" fathers, Group B men were less often able to achieve identification as a "good" father, and Group C made the superior adaptation to fatherhood.

The author states these findings suggest that "acting out" or impulsive behavior are prominent elements in serious clinical problems which occur in men who are expectant fathers. Although the author does not make this statement as part of his findings, it is interesting to note that the majority of expectant fathers with emotional problems had indications of problems prior to the occurrence of pregnancy.

T 4 Dick-Read, G. Childbirth without fear. New York: Harper & Row, 1959. Chapter 18.

The original proponent of natural childbirth, in chapter 18 of this book in which he explains his theories, Dr. Dick-Read advocates that all expectant fathers should be interested in their wives pregnancies and that they should, also, gain an understanding of what is going on. He also feels that if the father is prepared and requests to do so, he should be allowed to be present at the birth of his child.

C 25 Flemming, G. Delivering a happy father. American Journal of Nursing, 1972, 72(5), 949.

This article is a brief summary of how a delivery room staff apprehensively and defensively began a program permitting fathers in the delivery room. It describes the procedures used such as changing of father into scrub clothes, and points out that because the fathers who go to delivery room are prepared and choose to do so, they have not had any problems with fainting fathers. The author points out that the change was made because young childbearing couples asked for it, but the staff after eighteen months experience is convinced of the practice as well.

T 5 Forbes, R. A new role for expectant fathers. Midwife and Health Visitor, May 1972, 8, 166-168.

The author discusses the gradual change of the role of men and fathers in society. She states that the taboo against men being sensitive, and capable of showing emotion, crying, and making outbursts of joy is no longer appropriate. States that a lack of these qualities were in the past viewed as important if the man was to be successful in running offices, businesses, etc. This is no longer appropriate since women now need these same skills, and more emphasis is now being put on human relations. The author sees pregnancy as a time in which an expectant father can develop and learn new sensitivities by sharing the experience with his wife. States there is no evi-

dence which suggests men are not as skillful as women in the job of caring. Suggests that if a new image of shared parenthood can be achieved, perhaps fathers will find the task of fathering much easier and more rewarding.

E 4 Hartman, A., & Nicolay, R. C. Sexually deviant behavior in expectant fathers. Journal of Abnormal Psychology. 1966, 71(3), 232-234.

The purpose of this study was to investigate the association between pregnancy and antisocial behavior in expectant fathers. It offers data as a contribution to the unexplored area of expectant fatherhood. Based on comment by the staff of a court psychiatric clinic that men arrested for sexually deviant behavior frequently have pregnant wives, the authors collected data to test the following hypotheses: sexual offenses are more frequent among expectant fathers, offenses are more frequently regressive forms of behavior, sex offenders in the pregnancy group are more likely to be first arrests, sexual offenses by expectant fathers are more likely to occur in the last four months of pregnancy as sexual deprivation increases, and sex offenses are more likely to occur during the wife's first pregnancy.

Data was collected on 91 married men examined in the court psychiatric clinic whose arrests occurred during their wives' pregnancies, and on 91 men in the same setting whose wives were not pregnant. Results: 45% of expectant fathers were arrested for sex offenses, 17.6% of the control group were arrested for sex offenses. Because of the small sample of sex offenders in the control group, types of offensive behavior could not be compared, however, two-thirds of the sexual offenses among the expectant fathers were exhibitionism and pedophilia which suggests regressive kinds of behavior. There was no significant difference in the frequency of first arrests in the two groups, however, among the total group of married men, sexual offenders were more likely to be first offenders. There was no significant increase in sex offenses in the last part of pregnancy. Of the 41 expectant fathers who were sex offenders, 16 had wives in their first pregnancies, compared with 12 to 50 expectant fathers who were not sex offenders.

The authors conclude that the greater frequency of sex offenses among expectant fathers is indicative that pregnancy is a stress upon fathers. They ask the question that in view of the fact of greater frequency of sex offenses during first pregnancies if there is a change in adaptation in subsequent pregnancies. This article is interested and suggests that perhaps professionals need to pay more attention to the sexual concerns of expectant couples.

T 4 Hott, J. R. The crisis of expectant fatherhood. American Journal of Nursing, 1976, 76(9), 1436-1440.

Discusses the theory that pregnancy is a time of crisis for the expectant father as well as the mother, and recognizes the lack of literature and research regarding expectant fathers. Notes that in a

five year period the index to Psychological Abstracts listed 202 titles under "mother" and only 42 titles under "father". The author is critical of lay literature for expectant fathers in that most of it offers suggestions of how to live with a pregnant wife, but not how to deal with his own emotions. States that scientific writings are anthropological or sociological, and observational rather than experimental. Examples of a few studies available are given, and comment is made that these few studies imply that fatherhood is a crisis. Also, states that inadequate attention has been given fathers regarding the issue of abortion, induced of spontaneous. Is critical of child birth educators who advocate natural or prepared childbirth because it improves the marital relationship stating it may have the opposite effect if the father is not emotionally ready to participate. Theorized that age may be an important factor in fathers. Is critical of clinic care which provides few opportunities for husbands to share in their wives' care.

The author makes the following recommendations: be aware that pregnancy is a time of great stress for expectant parents, include the father's age as part of the parent's record, interview the couple at home early in pregnancy to observe their interaction in home territory, educate both the husband and wife in family planning so that pregnancy can be mutually planned, refer either partner to psychological counseling when necessary, focus childbirth education on the known benefits for the baby and "not on overly romanticized and dramatic reasons about improved marital relationships. Beware the zealot!", and do more research.

This author would do well to follow her own advice and do more research. Her comments about prepared childbirth are based on her own research. Research of others in this area gives conflicting reports.

T 4 Lacoursiere, R. The mental health of the prospective father: A new indication for Therapeutic abortion? Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic, 1972, 36, 645-650.

Discusses literature and gives case examples of mental illness related to pregnancy in expectant fathers. Points out that in current abortion laws, consideration of fathers is not given and suggests that by including the development of severe mental illness in the father as indication for therapeutic abortion may help to make abortion laws more humane. This proposal has a lot of political and moral implications.

T,E Marquart, R. K. Expectant fathers: What are their needs. MCN, The American Journal of Maternal Child Nursing, 1976, 1(1), 32-36.

Reviews current literature and research which indicates pregnancy is a time of stress for expectant fathers. Sees this as an indication that the expectant father needs support as well as the mother. To gain insight into the needs and problems of expectant fathers, the author

conducted a study which involved interviewing 15 married expectant fathers during the third trimester of their wives' pregnancies.

Results: the men agreed that pregnancy was personally stressful. Nine were ambivalent about the pregnancy until they felt the baby moving in their wives' bodies. They noticed changes in their wives but did not note a change in level of independence. They noticed their wives had developeda protectiveness towards the unborn child. They all agreed they felt more protective towards their wives. They all felt their marital relationship had changed, but most felt it was closer and more interdependent. Most said that sexual relations had decreased but attributed this to logistic problems and/or the wife's energy level. They felt that sexual relations would return to normal following delivery. Although they did not consider their wives' demands to have such projects as the infant's room completed immediately as problems, it did take them by surprise. Most of the men found that pregnancy became a common topic in their conversations, and wondered if they bored others. They, also, noticed they were interested in associating with other expectant couples. They felt the addition of the child would effect their activities, but they did not expect to change them, visualizing taking infant equipment along on trips and camp outs. They did mention considering the infant's schedule. Also, they foresaw a change in their own behavior in order to set good examples for their children.

Although this sample population is small, it is a beginning in research to look at the needs of the expectant father. Who else can better express these needs than the father himself.

E 4 Munroe, R. L., & Munroe, R. H. Male pregnancy symptoms and cross sex identity in three societies. The Journal of Social Psychology, 1971, 84, 11-25.

Research is conducted in three societies by the authors in order to support the hypothesis that male symptomatology during pregnancy has the basis psychological meaning of cross-sex identity. Data was gathered from three societies, studying symptom and non-symptom males. The instruments used in gathering data were for the purpose of identifying feminine characteristics and attitudes in the men. The findings in the three societies support the hypothesis, however, there were differences in the three societies. It was found that the occurrence of male pregnancy symptoms was more frequent in Black Carib males than in U.S. or Logoli males. This is probably due to the cultural practice of couvade among the Black Carib.

Overall, the investigation demonstrated female-like responses on overt measures in symptom males, and hyper-masculine responses on overt measures, which is interpreted as attempts to deal with underlying cross-sex identity. In two societies, male symptoms were associated with adult male absence during the first ten years of life.

Although this study is concerned with cross-sex identity, it is further evidence that many men do experience symptoms during their

wives pregnancies.

E 4 Obrzut, L. A. J. Expectant fathers' perception of fathering. American Journal of Nursing, 1976, 76(9), 1440-1442.

This study was conducted in an effort to learn how expectant fathers define fathering, prepare for it, how they feel about fatherhood. The method used was an interview of 20 expectant fathers. Results: The roles identified by the fathers were, breadwinner (39%), nurturer/care-giver (21%). The most important aspects cited, nurturing (33%), teaching (31%), and providing (11%). The fathers supported the view that fathering and mothering were complimentary processes, 85% thought the fathers role was different. Sixty-five percent thought their role in childrearing would be different from the mothers.

The author concludes that response of the fathers indicate that men prepare extensively for fathering and "take on" the father role as has been described in mothers as a taking on of the mother role. It, also, points out that men still see themselves as providers. The author suggests that nurses often overlook this need in their involvement in teaching child-care activities to fathers. Points out the importance of nurses in prenatal clinics encouraging participation of the father and conveying to them the importance of their roles, and helping them to express their thoughts and feelings.

The author recognizes the limitations of her study due to a small population, an untested tool, and the possibility that fathers responded in ways they thought were socially acceptible.

T,C 4 Sasmore, J. L. What every husband should know about having a baby. Chicago: Nelson-Hall, 1972.

Both of these books are aimed at expectant fathers and advocate their participation in pregnancy and childbirth. Pregnancy, labor and delivery, and the postpartum period are dealt with. They include instructions to husbands on how to help and support their wives during the childbearing experience.

T,C 25 Sasmor, J. L., Castor, C. R., & Hassid, P. The childbirth team during labor. American Journal of Nursing, 1973, 73(3), 444-447.

This paper is directed at labor room nurses, offering suggestions on how they can best support the prepared couple in labor. It gives a summary of the psychoprophylactic methods of preparation for childbirth, and explains how these techniques are used by the laboring couple. It stresses the importance of including the husband as a member of the childbirth team along with the doctors and nurses. The nurse needs to be supportive of the husband as well as the wife. Suggestions are given to help nurses to be supportive, and encouraging to the expectant father during the laboring process by keeping him informed of progress, and helping him to help his wife.

Ed. 4 Schaefer, G., & Zisowitz, M. L. The expectant father. New York: Simon and Shuster, 1964.

Written for the expectant father, this book advises fathers on what to expect during pregnancy, and how to be supportive of their wives. It advocates the participation of fathers in prenatal care and in labor. However, it strongly discourages his presence in the delivery room because he would have to change clothes and would be in the way. The book also urges that fathers not learn "too much" and not to make any medical decisions. Is repeatedly told to rely on the decisions made by the doctor and not to interfere. Would not recommend this book to expectant fathers.

T,C 25 Shu, C. Y. Husband-father in delivery room? Hospitals, J.A.H.A., September 16, 1973, 47, 90-94.

The paper summarizes data on the pros and cons of permitting fathers in the delivery room, presents examples in state regulations of changes made to permit the practice, and gives the guidelines of the American College of Obstetricians and Gynecologists for allowing husbands in the delivery room. The author views the presence of the husband in the delivery room as a privilege and not a right. The article closes with a quote from a California hospital administrator which advocates the establishment of specific and detailed policies regarding the practice of permitting fathers in the delivery room.

T,C 4 Summer, G. Giving expectant parents the help they need: The ABC's of prenatal education. MCN, The American Journal of Maternal Child Nursing, 1976, 1(4), 220-225.

The author strongly advocates the use of prenatal classes for expectant parents based on the assumptions that: the period of pregnancy is normal and one of wellness, it is a unique experience of the pregnant couple, alternatives for childbearing and child rearing need to be discussed, feelings and concerns shared in class can result in mutual understanding couples are acquainted with what is going to happen before it occurs which reduces anxiety, and classes enhance childbirth and pregnancy by providing education, and a group process opportunity.

A full description of the author's program is given. Unlike other prenatal programs, this one offers a first trimester class to help prepare couples for the months of pregnancy ahead, in addition to the third trimester classes which prepare the couple for labor and delivery. It is of interest that the topic of sexuality is included in the discussions in these classes. It would appear that these classes may help pregnant mothers and fathers in dealing with the common problems of expectant parenthood.

E 4 Trethowan, W. H., & Conlon, M. F. The couvade syndrome. British Journal of Psychiatry, 1965, 3, 57-66.

The authors define the couvade syndrome as physical symptoms which occur in husbands of pregnant women. These symptoms appear in the third month of pregnancy, but can occur any time and they disappear after the birth of the child. To study the occurrence of this syndrome, the authors conducted an investigation of 327 husbands during their wives' pregnancies and compared them with 221 men whose wives were not pregnant. The method used was questionnaire. The results demonstrated that a significantly greater number of expectant fathers had symptoms than did the controls. The most common symptoms were loss of appetite, toothache, and nausea or vomiting. From the survey it was concluded that possibly one in nine (11%) of all expectant fathers demonstrate the couvade syndrome.

T 4 Wainwright, W. H. Fatherhood as a precipitant of mental illness. American Journal of Psychiatric, 1966, 123(1), 40-44.

Through the presentation of ten case histories the author proposes the theory that pregnancy may precipitate psychopathological reactions in expectant fathers. He feels this is an area which has been overlooked by therapists probably due to their own positive attitudes toward childbirth. Suggests that reactions can occur in those who are not mentally ill, and advocates physicians giving support to potential fathers of their pregnant patients.

The author does recognize there are several factors operating together to produce symptoms in the cases he presents, however, expectant or recent fatherhood was currently the situation when the patient presented for treatment. Major elements regarding fatherhood are seen in these cases. These are: the child means added responsibilities, the birth of a male child threatens the father with the possibility of a loving relationship with a dependent male, the mother's attention is diverted by the child, the reaction of the mother to the birth may upset the previous husband-wife relationship, the father may be made aware of ambivalent feelings towards his own parents, and history of hereditary disease leads to fear the unborn child will be affected, and unconscious hostility towards the infant and/or wife may reinforce this worry.

More research is needed to determine if pregnancy is a factor in precipitating mental illness in expectant fathers.

E 4 Wapner, J. The attitudes, feelings, and behaviors of expectant fathers attending Lamaze classes. Birth and the Family Journal, 1979, 3(1), 5-13.

Prior to attending their first Lamaze class, 128 first-time expectant fathers were given a questionnaire which concerned attitudes, feelings, and behaviors related to the issue of expectant fatherhood. The fathers were also rated by their wives and by their instructors after the last class. The expectant fathers' major conqerns involved the issue of responsibility and providing for a young family. They

reported a great deal of emotional involvement in pregnancy and 56.2% expressed the feeling of being pregnant, also. The majority felt they should do more to protect their wives. Many reported a decrease sexual drive and/or activity. Few described themselves involved in such activities talking to the wives' doctors, arranging more time with their wives, doing extra work around the house, reading about pregnancy, or preparing house for infant's arrival. The wives rated the husbands lower on the nurturant scale than the husbands rated themselves. The wives, also, rated their husbands as more mature as a result of pregnancy and were of more help around the house than the fathers rated themselves. The instructors rated the husbands as being actively involved during the childbirth classes.

This study gives some indication of the concerns of expectant fathers. More research is needed in this area.

C 4 Wonnell, E. B. The education of the expectant father for childbirth. Nursing Clinics of North America, 1971, 6(1), 591-603.

This paper discusses the importance of preparing the expectant father for his role as support person during labor and delivery. Based on six years of teaching preparation for childbirth classes, the author gives practical suggestions on how to get the father actively involved in the birth process. Feels that classes should be geared to meet their needs as well as the needs of their wives.

C. TEENAGE/UNWED FATHERS

Schulte

Priefer

64

E 9 Biller, H. Paternal deprivation. Lexington, Mass.: Lexington Books, D.C. Heath & Company, 1974. Pp. 105-123.

Adequate fathering is assumed to be an essential requirement for the success of psychosexual development. Without paternal participation, the girl may idealize her father and later, as an adolescent, seek a love object similar to this idol.

The role of the mother is influential in the female's general personality development, but it is not as significant as the father's role in a child's sex role functioning. The father varies his role as a function of the sex of the child.

The girl's feminine development is much influenced by how her father differentiates his "masculine" role from her "feminine" role and the type of behavior he considers appropriate for his daughter. When fathers are absent, the daughter is likely to have problems in her sex role and personality development.

The female's ability to have a successful marriage is increased when she has experienced a warm affectionate relationship with a father who has encouraged her positive feminine development.

Lesbians described their fathers as less involved in their lives. The women felt their fathers acted like strangers toward them and the women were less accepting of both their fathers and their femininity during early childhood. It has been found that inadequate fathering rather than inadequate mothering is more of a factor in the development of female homosexuality.

This chapter deals quite well with the many facets of the father-daughter relationship. Many research studies are cited to support the statements. These studies are helpful if the reader would like to further research any of these areas. The research referred to in this chapter is quite extensive; it begins with Freud's theory of psychoanalysis (1924) and goes on to give current (1974) theories and studies.

C 4 Bourne, J. Pregnant and alone. Royston, England: Priory Press Ltd., 1971.

Description of social services available to unwed mothers in Great Britain. Encourages social workers to include the unwed father when making plans for the baby. "Except in very rare cases where the pregnancy has unquestionably been the outcome of rape, a positive relation of some kind has existed which is part of the pattern of the girl's life and which should not and, in fact cannot be ignored if she herself is to be treated as a responsible individual with the right to make decisions about her own life and that of her child."

The chapter outlines the legal rights and responsibilities of the unwed father and discusses the procedures for establishing paternity in England and other European countries.

E Bowerman, C. E., Irish, D. P., & Pope, H. Unwed motherhood: Personal and social consequences. Institute for Research in Social Science, Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1963-1966.

Bowerman, et al., interviewed 1100 unmarried mothers to find out their level of education, religious preference, parent pattern, disposition of the child, and the relationship between the alleged father and the unmarried mother. They also went on to study the consequences of being an unmarried mother and some aspects of illegitimacy.

This research provided an indepth picture of many of the aspects of unmarried motherhood. However, the authors touched lightly on the parents of the unmarried girl. There was only slight mention of the relationship between the parents and the girl. This seems a very important aspect for the authors to overlook when studying unmarried mothers.

ED Child Welfare League of America, Inc. Research perspectives on the unmarried mother. New York: Child Welfare League of America, Inc., 1961.

Research on the unmarried mother has many problems, some of which are:

1. Research is often based on unfounded generalizations that assume unmarried mothers observe in research studies or clinical reports are representative of all unmarried girls.
2. There is lack of objective and adequate data.
3. There is a tendency to assume that unmarried mothers constitute a meaningful category for study.
4. Unmarried mothers have been viewed as a psychological or psychiatric symptom.
5. Who do you compare unmarried mothers to . . . single or married females?, sexually active single females or those without sex experience?, With pregnant or non-pregnant females?

The authors suggest three frames of reference for studying the unmarried mother: (1) stress, (2) deviancy, and (3) social control.

One of the major problems in studying the unmarried mother and her family relationships is that caseworkers have relied naively on reports from the unmarried mother about her family relationships.

The authors of this excellent book point out objectively the many problems of researching unmarried mothers so it is a good frame of reference for anyone planning to work in this field.

ED 4 Child Welfare League of America. Standards for services for unmarried parents. New York: Child Welfare League of America, 1971. (3).

The book was written as an aid for social work agencies to insure high standards of services for unmarried parents. While the book states "unmarried parents", most of the discussion is about the unmarried mother. Chapter III encourages social work agencies to reach out to the unmarried father more than they have in the past. "The father should have assistance with his feelings and desire about the plan for the child, his concerns about the legal implications and his legal and moral responsibilities for the child." Approaches for involving the father in the casework are discussed. "In providing social work for the unmarried father, it is important to approach him as a prospective or actual parent and as an individual with his own needs and problems rather than as an adjunct to the plan for the unmarried mother and child, or only as a source of financial support."

C Edlin, S. B. The unmarried mother in our society. New York: Farrar, Straus and Young, 1954.

Edlin states that "the unwed mother should not be marked as a particular type, she is a person like any other, reacting to her social and emotional environment in her own individual manner (page 85)." She goes on to say that the background of the unmarried mother has changed today. They come from all strata and represent nearly a true cross-section of the whole population. The majority of unmarried mothers are emotionally immature, shy, and fail to form satisfactory social contacts outside the home. They come from inharmonious families and it is most common to have a strong but neglectful father.

The author unfortunately uses her personal case studies to say that unmarried mothers come from this type or that type of family. There is no research to back up any of these generalizations. It could be that all the same type of unmarried girls go to the home where the author compiled the case studies.

E Festinger, T. B. Unwed mothers and their decisions to keep or surrender children. Child Welfare, 1971, 50, 253-263.

Case records of the unwed mothers in one social agency who decided to keep their babies were analyzed. Most of the women who decided to keep their babies had known the father for at least a year, planned to continue seeing him and talked of marrying him. Not very informative.

C 4 Futterman, S., & Levirmore, J. B. Putative fathers. Journal of Social Casework, 1947, 28, 174-178.

Freudian discussion of unwed fathers based on clinical observations of cases seen in a psychiatric clinic for treatment of other problems. Concludes that all unwed fathers have unconscious desires to become fathers and to act out their fears of impotence and the Oedipal Complex.

ED 4 Juhasz, A. M. The unmarried adolescent parent. Adolescence, IX (Summer 1974), 263-271.

There is an increasing number of unmarried mothers today. This article discusses the causes of illegitimacy. The mother and father's relationships is important in developing attitudes about marriage and sexuality.

It was found that most of the unmarried mothers came from homes where there was no father figure. These girls were pictured as promiscuous girls of loose morals. However, this statement has been found to be inaccurate.

The article also reviews Pannor's research on the profile of unmarried fathers. The profile resembles that of the unmarried mother. Unmarried fathers need more help in dealing with their guilt and social problems.

This literature is sporatic in its attempt to deal with unmarried adolescents. The author takes on too many aspects (extent of the problem, factors influencing illegitimacy, unwed mother, unwed father, and the problems of illegitimacy), it does not go into detail about the various phases. Too few studies are cited to confirm the generalizations and do not give evidence to substantiate their claims.

ED 4 Kreech, F. The current role and services of agencies for unwed parents and their children. Child Welfare, 1974, 53, 323-328.

Urges social workers to involve unmarried fathers in casework when working with unmarried mothers. This is especially important in light of recent U.S. Supreme Court decisions which established the right of unmarried fathers to be notified of his paternity and of the right to a day in court if there is to be a child custody hearing.

E 15 Lang, D. M., Papenfuhs, R., & Walters, J. Delinquent females' perceptions of their fathers. The Family Coordinator, October 1976, 25, 475-481.

The arrest rates for female adolescents is rising three times faster than for males of the same age.

Fathers are more influential in the development of delinquent behavior in both daughters and sons than mothers are. Fathers of delinquent girls as compared to fathers of non-delinquent girls are less nurturant, more likely to be non-functioning in the family, are more neglectful, punitive, cold, mistrusting, and rejecting. Delinquent girls come from broken homes more often than delinquent boys. Unmarried mothers feel their fathers love them only minimally.

This study had inconsistent patterns of perceptions of fathers. Two hypotheses were tested:

(1) Perceptions of delinquents concerning their fathers are independent of:

a. type of physical punishment received.
b. degree of masculinity-femininity of the delinquents

c. educational level of their fathers
d. degree of masculinity of their fathers
e. parents' marital status

(2) Perceptions of delinquents concerning their fathers are significantly related to:

a. father's love of respondent
b. parent who influenced the respondent the most
c. the parent who guided the family
d. agent of discipline
e. the parent(s) with whom the respondent lived while growing up
f. perceived childhood happiness.

The two groups had different patterns of perceptions of fathers, but few prevailing factors are characteristic of both groups. They are:

(1) high degree of father absence or neglect
(2) most of the parents were separated or divorced
(3) the mother is the most influencing parent
(4) mothers loved the children the most and the adolescents felt their fathers loved them less
(5) the fathers were viewed as cold, rejecting and uninvolved by the children.

The father emerged as the more damaging toward the adolescent.

This was a significant study. The two hypotheses were supported by the results of the study. The author used valid (Itkins Attitudes Toward Parents Scale) measures to test their two hypotheses. Their inquiry was backed with appropriate research. More than an adequate number of subjects were used in the project to make results meaningful.

C 4 Sister Margaret Mary. Contribution of social work to services for unmarried parents. Effective services for unmarried parents and their children. New York: National Council on Illegitimacy, 1968. Pp. 63-69.

Article urges social workers to be assertive in their casework and to include unwed fathers in it. The unwed father has a poor self-image and a tremendous amount of guilt. Personal counseling and participating in the decision making concerning the mother and child will help him lessen his guilt and learn to act responsibly.

C 7 Miller, A. G. The relationship between family interaction and sexual behavior in adolescence. Journal of Community Psychology, July 1974, 285-288.

This study interviewed Caucasian families to study family dynamics. The fathers of unmarried mothers were thought to be either passive or absent in their interactions with their daughters. Unmarried mothers were compared to a control group of girls from a Girl Scout group. The two groups were given a questionnaire to fill out and then had taped conversations. The groups did not differ in age, social class, family size or religion. The only difference was seen in the birth order and school grades. The Girl Scout group was the oldest child

in their families and had high academic grades whereas the unmarried group were younger children in their families and received lower grades in school. The unmarried mothers had more power in their family discussions than the comparison group.

The fathers in the unmarried mothers family had less power than in the Girl Scout family. The unmarried mother was dependent on her mother and isolated from her father. Unmarried mothers also talked more to their mothers and less to their fathers than the comparison group. The mothers of the unmarried girls talked more to their daughters and the fathers of these girls talked less to their daughters than the Girl Scout girls.

This study supports clinical literature on unwed mothers. It identified several distinctive family patterns such as, powerful mothers, the father is usually passive, the daughter is excessively involved with the mother and she generally has a negative interactions with her father.

The number of subjects in the study was extremely small (11 and 7). The study did however use valid measures such as the Mann-Whitney U Test, Bales Categories, Moses Test of Extreme Reactions.

The procedures in the study were valid. The research tested the hypotheses using the family's verbal interactions which is a highly satisfactory method for measurement.

ED 4 Pannor, R. The forgotten man. Nursing Outlook, 1970, 18, 36-37.

E 4 Pannor, R. The teen-age unwed father. Clinical Obstetrics and Gynecology, 1971, 14, 466-472.

Description of unwed fathers based on a three year research project at the Vista Del Mar Agency in California. The research indicates that most unmarried fathers are themselves from homes without fathers. They are irresponsible and are not aware of possible consequences of their sexual relations. Their girlfriend's pregnancies came as complete surprises. Unmarried fathers need assistance to become responsible men. Pannor offers these suggestions to social workers: (1) Encourage the unmarried father to stand by the unwed mother; (2) Encourage the unmarried father to take an active role in deciding what will be done with the baby; (3) Help the unmarried father understand how and why he became an unwed father.

E 4 Pannor, R., Massarek, F., & Evans, B. The unmarried father. New York: Springer Publishing Company, 1971.

Most comprehensive work on the subject of unmarried fathers. The book is a result of a three year HEW research grant. Data was compiled from personal interviews, case records and personality inventories. The results found unmarried fathers to be from the same social class and educational level as the unmarried mother. The greatest number of unmarried fathers were in the age group of 20-24 and 50% of them were from families without fathers. The unmarried

father's profile is of a "Person who possesses adequate social skills for obtaining his ends and objectives. However, his lack of social maturity and responsibility, with an overemphasis on self gain, indicates the possibility that he will encounter difficulties in forming meaningful relationships with others. His ability to form relationships may be destined to be used principally for his self-gratification with little concern for the needs of others."

Social workers who interviewed the unmarried fathers felt that 96% of them used sex to prove their masculinity and that they viewed sex as fun and had little thought for the consequences. Seventy-four percent of the unmarried fathers said that pregnancy was something that "just happened" even though they were knowledgeable about methods of contraception and half of them had used them at other times. Social workers at ten Vista Del Mar Agency actively encouraged unmarried fathers to become involved in the casework because they felt this involvement helped the fathers to deal with the results of their behavior. Pannor found that the fathers were most likely to become involved if the unmarried mother agreed that he should be. The role of the social workers was to help the unmarried father act responsibly towards the mother and baby. Pannor hoped that this active involvement would reduce the chances of recidivism.

E 4 Pannor, R., Evan, B., & Massarik, F. The unmarried father findings and implications for practice. Effective services for unmarried parents and their children. New York: National Council on Illegitimacy, 1968, 63-69.

Best overall summary of Pannor's research with unmarried fathers at the Vista Del Mar Agency from 1963-1966. Enumerates the objectives of the research, outlines the population studied and summarizes the projects findings according to their research objectives. A psychosocial profile of the unmarried father was developed. The study found an unmarried mother/father constellation exists "in which neither sex partner possesses a strong identity, neither is responsible and mature and each partner reinforces the other to satisfy their own personal needs with little regard for the consequences." Several suggestions are also made for the prevention of illegitimacy.

ED 4 Pannor, R., & Evan, B. The unmarried father revisited. The Journal of School Health, 1975, 45, 286-291.

Description of the effects of the recent U.S. Supreme Court rulings on the rights of unwed fathers. In Stanley vs. Illinois, the court decided that the father needs to be a party to any custody hearings of his children. In Rothstein vs. Lutheran Social Services it was decided that the father must be notified of any hearings for adoption proceedings. The implications for social workers of these court decisions is that they must involve the unmarried father in their casework to insure that they do not violate his rights. Step-by-step suggestions for helping social workers to identify and locate fathers

and then to involve them in the casework are offered. Suggestions are also included for working with the parents of unwed mothers to have them cooperate in naming the father and to agree to the unwed father's participation in decision making for the baby. Good article for social workers who work with unmarried mothers and fathers.

E Pape, H. Unwed mothers and their sex partners. Journal of Marriage and Family, 1967, 29, 555-567.

Study of the nature of the social relationship of unwed mothers to unwed fathers in North Carolina. Personal interviews were conducted with 532 Black and 387 White, never married, pregnant for the first time, mothers. Study found that most unmarried mothers had gone with their sexual partners for a long time and were planning to marry him. Most of the fathers were from the same social background as the mothers and were known to her parents and friends.

C 4 Perkins, R. F., & Grayson, E. S. The juvenile unwed father. Effective services for unmarried parents and their children. New York: National Council on Illegitimacy, 1968. Pp. 57-62.

A study of group counseling sessions with adolescent unmarried fathers in a Philadelphia detention center. Records of the counseling sessions were analyzed from a Freudian point of view. Three-fourths of the unmarried fathers came from female dominated homes, felt that they had been deserted by their own fathers and felt that they were doing the same thing to their children. Most of the adolescents expressed a desire to marry the mother so that their baby wouldn't grow up hating them. The adolescents expressed a great deal of self-hatred about their role as unwed fathers and were angry that no one talked to them about how it felt. One of them said "Boys ain't supposed to show how we feel, so when we don't show how we feel, everybody thinks we feel fine. We act like we did a big thing, but inside me, I don't feel so big, so good about it. But who would believe that, or even care about how I feel anyway?" The authors feel that unless unmarried fathers are given a chance to express their feelings about their role as unwed fathers, their self-hatred will be expressed by acting out which may lead to further conflicts with society and the law.

E 4 Philadelphia Municipal Court Survey Series. Unmarried mothers in the Municipal Court of Philadelphia. Philadelphia: Thomas Skelton, A. Harrison Foundation, 1933. (XII).

The court's main interest in the father was in obtaining some support for the child and thus encouraged a more thorough investigation of the father's background and living conditions so that the court would be better able to assess and enforce support payments to the unmarried mother. The court encouraged social work agencies to include the unmarried father in casework because many of them were young and in need of supervision to prevent them from repeating this

act. Not very helpful article.

E 9 Pochen, J. Without a wedding ring. New York: Schocken Books, 1969. Pp. 1-26.

Sources of the unmarried mothers lie partly in the personality of the unmarried mother herself, partly in her unbringing and homelife. The parents of these girls and the attitudes they have toward their daughters are described as the primary factors in most instances of illegitimacy.

This study is guilty of overgeneralizations. No statistics are cited or research to give credence to the book. The author mentions one case study and then generalized to all unmarried mothers. The book is written like a soap opera as evidenced by its title.

E 4 Pozsonyi, J. A longitudinal study of unmarried mothers who kept their first-born children. London, Ontario: Family and Children's Services of London and Middlesex, 1973. (I).

Longitudinal study of 59 unmarried mothers in Canada. Personal interviews were conducted with the mothers at six, twelve, and eighteen months after the delivery of their babies. Mothers reported on the length of their relationship with their child's father. The mothers reported that only 12% of the fathers had any kind of counseling and less than 20% contributed financially to the support of their child. Author urged social agencies to take a more aggressive role to involve fathers in casework because they might assume more responsibility towards the mother and child.

C 4 Price, J. V. Problems of adolescent fathers. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1971, 41, 294.

Article based on clinical observations of 210 adolescent unwed fathers at an adolescent pregnancy program in Atlanta. Describes unmarried fathers as coming from homes without fathers. The social workers working with the fathers said that the adolescents used sex to compensate for feeling unloved. The fathers had little real knowledge of contraceptives and expressed a great deal of guilt over their role as unwed fathers.

C Reed, R. The illegitimate family in New York City. New York: Columbia University Press, 1934. (14).

Descriptive study of the types of services being offered to illegitimate families in New York City in 1930. Case records from all the social agencies that worked with unwed mothers that year were reviewed. The prevalent attitude of social workers at the time was to discourage any association between the unwed mother and the father of her baby. Many case records did not even mention the father. One agency said, "We ask no questions about the father--he is of no importance in the situation." Direct association between the unwed father and his child was openly discouraged and many maternity homes would

prevent the father from seeing his baby. Social workers justified this by saying the unwed father was young and would go on to other involvements. Reed encouraged social workers to become more involved with the unmarried father because they needed help in learning to assume their responsibilities and social workers would be good role models from which to learn these behaviors.

C 4 Reider, N. The unmarried father. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1948, 18, 230-237.

Clinical observations from a psychiatric practice. Heavy Freudian point of view of unwed fathers. Becoming an unwed father was a way of acting out the Oedipal Complex andproving his virility. Most of the unwed fathers he saw were shocked to learn of their paternity and were overwhelmed by guilt. Their reaction to the news of pregnancy, denial, running away, was determined by the amount of guilt that they experienced.

E 4 Robbins, M. B., & Lynn, D. B. The unwed fathers: Generation recidivism and attitudes about intercourse in California Youth Authority Wards. Journal of Sex Research, 1973, 9, 334-341.

Comparison study of two groups of delinquent adolescent boys to determine their attitudes on sex and illegitimacy. Both groups of boys were in treatment at a California detention center and one group consisted of unwed fathers.

The records of group counseling sessions were analyzed and questionnaires were administered. The results agreed with Pannor's research that as a group adolescent unwed fathers are more immature and irresponsible with regard to sex than a similar group of adolescent boys who are not fathers. The research found that the unwed fathers were more likely to be illegitimate themselves and to have siblings who had illegitimate children. The unwed fathers also differed from non-fathers on the following attitudes:

1. Unwed fathers assumed their children would not be affected by being illegitimate.
2. Unwed fathers approved of their own children being unwed parents.
3. Unwed fathers approved of extramarital sex.
4. Unwed fathers disapproved of contraceptives.
5. Unwed fathers would marry a woman with an illegitimate child by another man.

E 9 Schrage, P. S., & Hansen, M. N. L. Some causative factors in unmarried parenthood. A project submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Master of Science (Social Work). Madison: University of Wisconsin, 1951.

This study researched causative factors found in average unmarried mothers who came to a private state-wide agency in 1948. The study

researched 85 girls and their personal histories, family backgrounds, and environmental situations. It was found that their average age was 19.81, 77.6% had normal health, 54.1% finished high school, while 2% were college graduates and 5% had one or two years of college. Eighty-five percent were gainfully employed and they came from an average family size of 4.7 children. In 60.76% of the cases the girl was either the oldest or youngest child. In 68.23% of the cases her parents were married. The average grade achievement of the unmarried mother's parents appeared to be normal for their generation. They did not come from families of low occupational status. The girls expressed more negative feelings toward their mothers than toward their fathers. The girls' mothers expressed more positive feelings toward the girls than the fathers did. The girl's feelings toward their fathers were less pronounced. Hostility and rejection were the most frequent expressions made toward the fathers although it was not possible to get a clear-cut picture of the father because the social worker was prone to overlook him. The social workers did state that in most cases where a girl was hostile toward her father, she showed evidences of an unresolved Oedipus Complex.

This was a well researched study. It researched every aspect that plays a part in the unmarried mother's life. It is interesting to note that the author found two exceptions to popular notions about unmarried mothers: (1) Unmarried mothers do not come from low socio-economic families; and (2) Unmarried mothers tend to come from families where both parents are present.

This research project should be duplicated today to see if the findings can still be substantiated.

C 4 Smith, F. The unmarried father. Contemporary Review, 1972, 220, 22-27.

A British social worker reviewed the case records of 300 unmarried fathers that he had personally worked with. He described the unmarried father as an adolescent who needs help in dealing with his feelings and in telling his parents about the pregnancy. Too often the unmarried father is ignored by social workers. It is their role "to make the unmarried father aware of the social and legal implications of his situation and he should be treated as a person who is able to make his own decisions concerning his involvement."

E 4 U.S. Children's Bureau, The father's of children born out of wedlock. Washington, D.C.: Federal Security Agency Social Security Administration, 1939.

A 1939 survey of the prevalent services offered to unmarried fathers by social work agencies. Statistical data concerning the age and social class of unmarried fathers. States that the unmarried father is more likely to establish paternity and contribute support to the child if he is given a chance to express his side of the situation and thus urges social workers to involve the unmarried fathers in their casework with unmarried mothers.

E Vincent, C. E. Unmarried fathers and the mores: Sexual exploiter as an Ex Post Facto Label. American Sociological Review, 1960, 25, 40-46.

As indicated by the title, the article is a difficult one to understand. A research study to determine a profile of the sexual partners of unmarried mothers and to determine if the mothers were sexually exploited. Data obtained on the sexual partners of 201 White, never married, first time pregnant women in Almeda County, California. The data dispells the popular myth that the unwed father is an older, better educated man who seduced a younger, less educated woman. Data indicated that the age and educational differences between unmarried mothers and fathers approximated those of husband-wife differences in the general population, and that the mothers had not been exploited.

E Vincent, C. E. Unmarried mothers. Glencoe: The Free Press, 1961. Pp. 99-185.

Vincent studied 539 unmarried mothers in Alaeda County, California. Most of these girls came from established middle class families. This project studies comparative data from a quasi-control group of 100--a matched sample of single-never-pregnant females. Because of the young age of the unmarried mothers, they used high school seniors as a comparison group. Both groups came from an equal number of broken homes. Smaller differences than anticipated were found when the girls were looked at for personality profiles. The unmarried mothers had a less positive image of themselves than the control group.

Unmarried mothers received most of their sex information from friends, whereas the high school girls received their information from their mothers or from school instructional classes.

There was no significant difference found in the home life of the two groups even though it was expected that the unmarried mothers would paint a more negative picture of their home life. Thirty-five percent of unmarried mothers came from broken homes and 31% of the high school girls came from broken homes. If the reader just looked at the unmarried category and broken homes, the results could be read differently. In both groups, the mothers were reported to be consistently predominant and dominant. Descriptive data for unmarried mothers are too frequently interpreted as causal explanations of illegitimacy.

It was summarized that unwed motherhood is not the result of any one personality type, intra-familial relationships or social situation.

This is an excellent research design. The findings were contrary to most research that has been done. Vincent's findings give impetus to the need for the duplication of this type of research.

E 4 Watson, A. E. Illegitimacy. Bryn Mawr: Published dissertation, Bryn Mawr College, 1923. (3)

Study of 629 cases of illegitimacy in Philadelphia for the one year period, 1916-1917, to determine the scope of the problem and to discover what services were being offered to unmarried mothers. Fathers were

mentioned in only a third of the case records, and of those mentioned "87% of the alleged fathers showed character traits which would have made them undesireable parents even if married". Statistical data on the father's occupation, income, educational level, marital status, and child support contributions was reported.

E 4,9 Wimperis, V. The unmarried mother and her child. London: George Allen and Unwin Ltd., 1960. Pp. 1-51.

This is a study of British unmarried mothers. Author states that unmarried mothers in England differ from the U.S. in that in England the unmarried mothers know the father of the baby quite well and for some time. Most of the unmarried girls' fathers are away from home most of the time. Most of their fathers are skilled workers (51%) and most come from broken homes (40%). Sixty-four-and-six-tenths of the unmarried mothers were the oldest child in their families.

Although not about unmarried mothers in the United States, the method of research is similar to research done here. Statistics are taken from case studies, but the author does not research any topic very thoroughly. Jumps around from topic to topic and country to country. Does not mention very much about the father of the unmarried girl or even the family's relationship to the unmarried girl.

C 4 Young, L. Out of wedlock. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., 1954 (8).

The unwed father discussed from a Freudian point of view. The author analyzed the case record of 1350 unwed mothers in New York City. From the mother's statements about the father's, Young concludes that the unmarried father is the neurotic counterpart of the unmarried mother, and that their problems compliment one another. Young says that the unmarried father comes from the same type of family background as the unmarried mother, female dominated, and thus has blocked emotional development. Unwed fathers often have an unconscious desire to have a baby as an expression of hostility towards his mother and as a way to express his masculinity. Young does urge social workers to include the fathers in their casework with unmarried mothers because they need help in learning to assume responsibilities, but warns agencies to have male social workers work with the unwed fathers because they are so hostile towards women.

C 9 Young, L. R. Personality patterns in unmarried mothers. In R. W. Roberts (Ed.), The unwed mother. New York: Harper & Row, 1966.

Studied 100 cases of unmarried mothers and it became apparent that almost all girls had come from two or three general types of family patterns.

Girls who came from families where the mother was dominant had fathers who were weak and usually cut off from the children. The girls said their fathers were often strangers who paid the bills, but did not share intimately in their lives. The mothers in these families dominated the daughter's life to an unhealthy degree. They were usually

possessive and often sadistic and rejecting. The girl in this family was overly dependent on her mother and was constantly involved in the conflict between her love and hate for her mother. These girls talked about their mothers as real persons and the fathers as shadowy persons.

In families where the father was dominant, the girls often expressed fear or resentment, usually both, toward their fathers. The fathers were described as stern and unsympathetic, whose chief role in relation to the children was that of disciplinarian. These fathers were seen as overly strict in demands upon the children. They had no understanding of the children's needs and in some cases were abusive.

The mothers in these families were seen as ineffectual persons who rarely opposed the husband's authority. The girls in these families are protective toward their mothers because the fathers are usually abusive toward the mothers.

The girls in most of these cases come from homes where the father is gone and the mother is the dominant authority.

The author infers that not many of the girls had happy relationships with their parents. All the girls had fundamental problems in relationships with other people, and had self-punishment in their personalities.

Young neglects to inform the reader how she obtained the information gathered. She makes sweeping statements and does not use any statistics to back them up. The book is guilty of oversimplification. Another took unmarried mothers and placed them in one type of family or the other.

D. BLACK FATHERS

McCabe 78

Olsen

T, Ed Adams, B. The Black American family today. In The family: A Sociological Interpretation. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1975. Pp. 125-136.

Adams gives a good brief account of the viewpoint expressed by the majority of sociologists until the mid-1960's; that is, that the black family is a social problem because it is "disorganized, traditionless, free-floating, and matricentric". Adams then cites various authors, writing since Moynihan, who refute all or part of the traditional description of the black family. He states that just as all whites do not follow the same patterns, all blacks do not either, "nor are all black families simply a reflection in all particulars of white middle-class and lower-class models". He asks where the differences lie among blacks and what is the significance of those differences. Bernard's typology and Billingsley's work is discussed. Another viewpoint states that there is cultural uniqueness and validity to the black model. "One should not ignore alternative analytic frameworks, such as varieties of family structure and the adaptability of alternative kin ties among urban blacks", Adam says. He concludes this section by stating his belief that blacks lie somewhere in between being similar to whites, except for economic stresses, and having a culture and belief system that is unique, strong and in some ways superior to white belief systems.

E 8 Aldous, J. Children's perception of adult role assignment: Father-absence, class race and sex influence. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1972, 55-64.

Children perceived roles differently in father absent and father present homes. Aldous contends that father absent children will see men less as responsible wage earners and as disciplinarians and more often as nurturant and affectionate. The sample she used was from headstart programs in Mississippi and Tennessee.

Her results showed that for both father absent and father present families, lower class children did not see fathers as very active in familial roles aside from conventional breadwinner, decision-maker roles. The research indicates that low income children have a knowledge of conventional adult sex role assignment despite father absence and role reversals in their own families.

Two things left out in her research design were data on length of time the father was gone, though all had to be absent for at least one year, and the closeness with the child when the father was present. Her research seems to indicate that children do learn the conventional sex roles, even when the father is absent. The child is obviously learning it from the mother, other males, media, etc. It would have been interesting to have another group of middle-class black and white children to compare to this group to see if there are any class differences.

T Bernard, J. Marriage and family among Negroes. New York: Prentice-Hall, 1966.

Bernard attempts to discover what differentiates those black families who conform to the middle class white norms concerning marriage and the family and those who do not. She defines two strands in Negro society, those who are acculturated and have internalized the norms of the larger society, and those who have merely externally adapted to the norms of the larger society and have not internalized them. According to Bernard, each of these strands includes all economic levels, so one must not equate the acculturated with those who make more money and the externally adapted with those from the lowest income categories. The bulk of the book describes more fully how each of these strands relate to the various roles of black men and women.

In describing the pattern of father performance Bernard says, "Nowhere, perhaps, is the difference between the two cultures among Negroes more striking than it is in paternal role performance." Among the acculturated, the father shows as much high aspirations for his children as do fathers in the outside world. This shows up in all income levels. Among the externally adapted, though there may be lip service given to the norms of the larger society, there is little sustained and responsible contact between father and children. Fatherhood is low in their hierarchy of values.

Bernard's model is not very satisfying, for though she describes much, she explains little.

E 8 Biller, H. A note on father absence and masculine development in lower class Negro and white boys. Child Development, September 1968, 1003-1006.

Biller used the lT scale with six-year-old black and white boys. He wanted to discover the relation of father absence and sociocultural background to masculine development. His subjects were boys enrolled in a summer program from Education Improvement Program in Durham, North Carolina. A total of 29 boys participated. There were 15 Negro boys and 14 white boys. Six Negro and 5 white boys were from father absent households.

He found that white boys who had fathers present were the most masculine with black father absent boys were the least masculine. Biller found no significant difference between white father absent and black father present boys. He concludes that "underlying sex-role orientation is more influenced by father availability and family background than are more manifest aspects of masculinity."

Biller's findings seems to reinforce the matriarchy theory and his research is continuously cited by other researchers. A number of questions should be raised, though, about the use of a sole test (IT) to conclude that father absent black children are less masculine than father absent white children. A larger sample size may also be in order. To conclude from a sample size of six father absent black boys that these boys are less masculine raises some doubt. Another concern raised is the question of cultural bias in the IT test; were all the variables carefully controlled for in this research design?

T Billingsley, A. Black families in white America. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1968.

This is an examination of Negro family life from a social systems approach, first put forth by Talcott Parsons and Robert F. Bales in the fifties. The first chapter develops this approach as it applies to the black family and presents a rather detailed description of the different structural types of families and functions of the family. He uses Parsons' typology of instrumental and expressive functions to describe the roles of family members. He believes the first priority in making the black family more stable should be towards making the family more stable economically. He also feels the black family will not be able to meet the instrumental needs of its members or its responsibilities to the larger society until the larger institutional framework, developed according to the needs of middle class white families, is restructured. In describing the role of the father, Billingsley syas that the simple model which allocates instrumental functions to the father cannot be expected to describe all of the adaptations required for the Negro family in its struggle for survival. Billingsley does not take the view that what is required of black families in our society is essentially the same as what is required of white families. He feels that because of their history of slavery, the caste-like qualities in America that relegate all blacks to inferior status, and the social class and economic systems which keep most blacks in the lower social classes, are the important factors which make the socialization of the black child quite different from that of the white child.

T Billingsley, A. Family functioning in the low-income black community. Social Casework, 1969, 50, 563-572.

Billingsley looks at the black family as a social system in the black community and a part of the larger community. He strongly disagrees with the Moynihan report and contends that "the family is a creature of society, and the greatest problem facing black families are problems that emanate from our white racist, militaristic and materialistic society." Statistics show that most black men are still married to their first wife and the majority of families consist of husband-wife.

He goes on to cite numerous researchers that have found the black family to not be a matriarchy. He believes that black family life is much more varied than is currently recognized. He finds that black fathers are more likely to help with child care tasks than household tasks. From his own research and others he has found that black families share an equalitarian decision-making pattern in most areas of their relationship.

The article was interesting, but did not shed a lot of new light on black family research. It is, though, a pattern of evolution as Billingsley continues to write. It seems he is becoming more outspoken as a result of much of the negative literature on the black family as he was one of the earlier writers on the black family.

E Blood, R., & Wolfe, D. Negro-white differences in blue collar marriages in a Northern metropolis. Social Forces, 1969, 48, 59-64.

This study used Blood and Wolfe's sample of 731 wives that comprised their 1955 study. Ninety-six percent of the black husbands in the sample had blue collar jobs, while 57 percent of the white husbands had blue collar jobs. The results showed that black women dominate their spouses more (39%) than white women (21%). White women viewed themselves, more than black women, as being in an equalitarian relationship.

Blood and Wolfe sum up their study by saying: "This comparison of Negro and white blue collar marriages show significant differences in many variables in the direction of greater deprivation for Negro wives. In decision-making they get less cooperation from their husbands so they must make more family decisions unaided. In the division of labor at home, Black husbands helped out less in difficult circumstances. In the leisure time aspects of marriage, less interaction takes place between black husband and wives. Black men did not share as often their day's experiences with their wives. In return, black wives did not share their own troubles very often. These objective deficiencies in marital interaction patterns are reflected in greater dissatisfaction of black wives with their males."

This study has come under a great deal of attack since it was published in 1960. This particular article seems to be rehashing all the old arguments of why there is a problem in the black family. The study has been criticized for only viewing the wives, persons conducting the interviewing, honesty or objectivity the wives had in describing their family situation and not dealing with the fact that according to the scale devised by Blood and Wolfe, both black and white families had equalitarian relationships.

E DuBois, W. E. B. The Negro American family. New York: Negro Universities Press, 1969.

Originally published in 1908, this is one of the first intensive studies of the Negro family, both rural and urban, and is divided into four parts: the formation of the family, descriptions of the home, economics of the family, and descriptions of family life. In each of these sections an attempt is made at the beginning to connect present conditions with the African past. After a review of the scant literature available then on African patterns in each of the four parts, DuBois details how the condition of slavery in America affected these aspects of Negro families. An important conclusion drawn is that though slavery gave the monogamic family ideal to slaves this ideal

was all but impossible to live up to in practice, for there was no legal marriage, no legal family, and no legal control over children for the slaves. Then, the major portion of each section is devoted to a description of conditions present in the first decade of the 20th century, using census data, observations compiled by students from Atlanta University, and a few studies of particular villages or towns. In his attempt to combine statistics with observational research, DuBois often makes statements with no hard data to back them up. But as he himself said, "this study is but a sketch with no pretense toward attempting to exhaust a fruitful subject. The main cause of its limitation is lack of material."

E Edwards, H. Black Muslim and Negro Christian family relationships. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1968, 68, 604-611.

This study looked at the interaction patterns of 14 Black Muslim or Nation of Islam couples and 14 black Christian couples. Edwards looked at the husband-wife relationship, parent-child interaction, extended kinship patterns, and family-community interaction. He interviewed and observed each family.

The results indicated that there were different patterns of interaction in the families of Christians and Muslims. The family life in the two different groups was different. The results indicated that there was a tendency for the Black Muslims to exhibit middle-class values and behavior patterns to a greater degree than black Christians.

This study was a very interesting one because it compared the family patterns of two different religious groups. It might have been more interesting if they had compared Black Muslims to white middle class families. It would appear that the Black Muslims are adhering to the more traditional white middle class values of America.

T Frazier, E. F. The Negro family in the United States. Chicago: University
E of Chicago Press, 1939.

This is a classic work by the famous black sociologist and his viewpoint was adopted by most researchers into the Negro family until the late 1960's. This book is an attempt to detail his belief that the Negro family was disorganized because of their history of slavery, urbanization, and poverty. Before he begins he lays to rest any thoughts that African traditions may have strongly affected Negro family practices. He says that "probably never before in history has a people been so nearly completely stripped of its social heritage as the Negroes who were brought to America." He states that "there is no reliable evidence that African culture has had any influence on its (the families) development." The institution of slavery affected Negro sexual practices, mating habits, and family life. According to Frazier, when the sexual impulses of the males were no longer controlled by African customs and morals they became subject only to periodic urge of sexual hunger and would seize upon the woman who happened to be at hand. About the effects of emancipation, Frazier says, "when the yoke of slavery was lifted, the drifting masses were left without any restraint upon their

vagrant impuses and wild desires." Though many families kept together, many did not, which disorganized the Negro family even more. Frazier continues with several chapters on the role of the mother in Negro families and then discusses the reasons that some families managed to keep together and in which the husband was considered dominant. He believes this was due to such families being favored in some way during slavery.

E Geismar, L., & Gerhart, U. Social class, ethnicity, and family functioning: Exploring some issues raised by the Moynihan report. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1968, 68, 480-487.

The paper is written in reaction to the Moynihan report. Their source of data was the Rutgers Family Life Improvement Project. The study was a longitudinal one and 133 families were selected out of 500 to participate. There were 50 black families, 50 white families, and 33 Puerto Rican families. Each family participated in a 2-3 hour open-ended interview session. The questions dealt with family history, child rearing practices, social functioning and alienation from society. Instruments used to assess the family included the St. Paul Scale of Family Functioning and the Hollingshead Two Factor Index of Social Position.

By doing this research Geismar and Gerhart hope to shed some light on the relationship between the social functioning of urban families and their ethnic status. Their findings show that social status overshadows ethnicity in determining the nature of family functioning. They found that by controlling for socioeconomic factors one can come close to eliminating variables attributable to race. Social class seems to act as a great leveler.

This research was probably one of the better research projects in response to the Moynihan report. It was one of the first ones to say that race may not make the difference in families, but comparing families from different social classes may make the difference.

C Grier, W. H., & Cobbs, P. M. Black rage. New York: Basic Books, 1968.

The authors are psychiatrists who believe that if racist hostility is to subside, and if we are to avoid open conflict on a nationwide scale then we, especially whites, will need information. The most important thing that "needs knowing" is that all blacks are angry, not just a few extremists. Many blacks are coming to realize that even their inner psychological suffering "is due largely to a hostile white majority . . ." Negroes want to change inside "but find it difficult to do so unless things outside are changed as well." Grier and Cobbs detail the psychological aspects of achieving womanhood in black society and how a boy achieves manhood. The authors realize that a great many problems of black people in America can be traced back to the widespread crumbling of the family structure. However, the cause of the sickness in black families "is not primarily the attack on manhood that discrimination relentlessly carries out . . .

It is not urbanization and the demand that the family adjust itself to a new world . . . Nor could it be poverty alone . . ." The problem is that one cannot build a strong family when the institutional structures of the nation make it impossible for the family to serve its primary purpose--the protection of its members. The authors believe that white society, through the courts, the police, and government offices, prevents black families from protecting their members.

After detailing various character traits of black people, character traits necessitated by the oppression around them, Grier and Cobbs make the statement that these character traits are the Black Norm, and if one wants to help a psychologically ill black person, one must first subtract the Black Norm and "what remains is illness and a proper subject for therapeutic endeavor." No attempt is made to operationalize this concept, besides considering the various character traits they consider within the Black Norm.

T,E Gutman, H. G. The black family in slavery and freedom: 1750-1925. New York: Pantheon, 1976.

This is an attempt to refute Moynihan's claim and conventional academic wisdom that the Negro family has deteriorated, beginning with the disasterous effects of slavery on the organization of Negro family life which permitted only the mother-child family to survive. Gutman's objective was to look at records available in 1855 and 1875 as well as in 1905 and 1925 to see if a fatherless matrifocal family had been even more common right after emancipation. If enslavement had caused the widespread development of such families then, he reasons, such a condition should have been even more common among Afro-Americans closer in time to slavery, than it was in urban ghettos in the 1960's. He first cites statistics from preliminary studies in Buffalo and New York. He found that from 1855 to 1925 the Buffalo black community was characterized by double-headed kin related households--ranging from 82 to 92 percent of all households. The New York 1925 study found that 85 percent of New York City kin related black households were double-headed. These are only two cities and it is not know if they are representative of other cities at that time.

The major portion of this book examines different aspects of the development of slave family and enlarged slave kin group. Records used are from various states' Freedmen's Bureaus, and plantation records from South Carolina, North Carolina, Virginia, Alabama, and Louisiana. Part Two examines through federal and state census records, and marriage records of several states, the ex-slaves and their descendants in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. A comparison between ex-slave and southern white marriage rates finds no differences. There is a wealth of information in this book, all leading to the conclusion that the black slave family structure was not primarily mother centered and that freedom or the northward urban migration did not initiate a breakdown in the black family. Unfortunately, only New York City was analyzed as an urban center in 1905

and 1925 so actually no firm conclusions can really be drawn about effects of urban migration on black family structure. Also, of course, there are inherent difficulties with plantation records which would limit any conclusions drawn about most slaves.

Hannerz, U. Soulside. New York: Columbia University Press, 1971.

Hannerz classifies families that he observed and interacted with as four types: (1) mainstreamers; (2) swingers; (3) street families; and (4) street corner men. Mainstreamers are the "respectable people" who own houses on the street. The husband is regarded as the head of the household, but much joint decision-making takes place. The swingers are usually men in their late teens to mid-30's and are predominately men who are single. Street families are child rearing households. It includes the mother and her child who is also old enough to have children. The brother may live there, but he has no role in the house and is only there as long as the mother says it is possible for him to stay. Street corner men are men that usually hang around one particular street corner day after day. They are usually older men, but occasionally the swingers will also be part of the street corner men.

If a couple spends less and less time together for whatever reason, the women will spend the additional time with intimate close kin and the men will spend the time with peer groups.

Hannerz's chapter 4 goes into the African background of black people, as well as discussing the history of slavery and low and insecure economic status. He discusses these three items to show the common background factors shared by the new world black community.

Chapter 6 is an interesting chapter entitled, "Growing Up Male". He says that role models do exist for husbandless households. These models include: boarders, resident males, male friends of the mother and male relatives.

Hannerz does a very good job of describing life on Winston Street in Washington, D.C. He presents a side of the black community, as well as Stack, that many people do not see. All of life in this black community is not bleak and the lifestyles are different from many other people, but it is all part of cultural pluralism in this country.

T Hare, N. What black intellectuals misunderstood about the black family. Black World, March 1976, 4-14.

This black psychologist's main point is that black intellectuals are rejecting the main theme of E. Franklin Frazier's work in the 1930's, 40's, and 50's; that "distortions and pathologies in the black family, as in all aspects of black society, is mainly a product of slavery and ensuing racism--or racial oppression..." Hare states that to asuage their feelings of inferiority, black intellectuals deny the pathology of oppression and make a desperate attempt to

spotlight hard-earned "strengths" in the search for white recognition. He says this is understandable, but not the most effective approach for social change.

He then discusses the inception of the strength-of-Black-families theme (in the forefront were sociologists Talcott Parsons and psychologist Erik Erikson) and says that the best approach is one in which positives and negatives are analyzed instead of the current prohibition of any recognition of pathological consequences of their oppression.

T,E Harwood, E., & Hodge, C. C. Jobs and the Negro family: A reappraisal. The Public Interest, 1971, 23, 125-131.

The authors dispute the prevelant view that relative to black men, black women have enjoyed an advantage in the urban labor market and that this situation has differed sharply from that of working class whites. They use findings of the U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics 1968-69 Urban Employment Survey to demonstrate that Negro men enjoy a clear economic superiority over Negro women. They quote census statistics from as far back as 1890 to show that this has always been the case. They say we need to know why Negroes have been disproportionately affected in their family life by hard times. They believe that it was the institution of slavery that was probably the most important factor in the emergence of the "peculiar institution of the urban north, the female-headed family." If an economic cause is to be sought in addition, they suffest that it may have been the black woman's handicaps in the labor market, not the man's.

T,E Herskovits, M. J. The myth of the Negro past. Boston: Beacon, 1958.

Herskovits, an anthropologist, believes that much of the study of the Negro American does not take into account the possible influence of pre-American cultural fragments retained by Negroes and affecting their present culture and behavior. This book is based on research conducted with West African, South American, and West Indian data collected in the course of two decades. Theoretically, Herskovits believes that culture is learned, not inborn, and that culture, being learned, can be additively learned. Herskovits believes that "...this additive learning is ever present in contact between peoples, and gives rise to new cultural forms. ...many of the pre-established modes of behavior are retained under contact, and that where cultural interchange occurs, those influence the form of what is taken over." He was not interested in cataloqueing Africanisms that were carried over in unaltered form, "but how, in the contact of Africans with Europeans and American Indians cultural accommodation and cultural integration had been achieved." In summary then, Herskovits was interested in how Afro-American groups have integrated old beliefs with new, reinterpreting both to fit a pattern of sanction and value that functions effectively in meeting the psychological needs of life. Herskovits covers many aspects of Africanisms in Negro family life, too many to be briefly mentioned in this summary. There are also

chapters on Africanisms in religious life and in language and the arts.

E, Ed Hill, R. The strengths of black families. New York: Astoria Press, 1971.

Hill, using U.S. census data and other research studies, describes what he believes are the strengths of the black family. These strengths are: strong kinship bonds, strong work orientation, adaptability of family roles, high achievement orientation, and religious orientation. He views these strengths as strong assets that many people overlook or are not aware of in this day and age. He attempts to argue that the Moynihan report was incorrect and one should not spend the time talking about weaknesses, but strengths. He uses the tables very effectively to argue his po[illegible].

While the book is relatively brief, it is to the point and Hill presents a lot of secondary data to reinforce his positions. It is the first book that really takes a positive look at the black family.

T, Ed. Hopkins, T. J. The role of the agency in supporting black manhood. Social Work, January 1973, 53-58.

This article explores the relationship between the black man and the agency in terms of agency attitudes that support or negate black manhood. First, the author points out the negative attitudes that the black man must cope with when contacting an agency. This is his weakest area for he offers no supporting evidence for his examples of agency attitudes. He then describes agency attitudes that support black manhood and illustrates the results of work with a group of black ghetto fathers at the Dr. Martin Luther King Family Center in Chicago, Illinois. Hopkins concludes by offering useful guidelines for any agency interested in developing and supporting black men's involvement in the community. Instead of being passive, the agency would be an active instrument of social change.

T Hyman, H., & Reed, J. Black matriarchy reconsidered: Evidence from secondary analysis of sample survey. Public Opinion Quarterly, Fall 1969, 346-354.

Hyman and Reed analyzed the results from the National Opinion Research Center poll in 1960, the College poll in 1951, and the poll conducted by the Survey Research Center in 1965. They looked for patterns in black and white responses to see if there were differences in decision-making, family interaction patterns, and roles played in each family.

Hyman and Reed discovered that the difference between black and white respondents in the three studies were small and inconsistent. Thus the results here do not show the black matriarchy as the literature prior to 1969 had suggested.

This was one of the studies that came out of the reaction to the Moynihan report. The sample size of the black population that Hyman and Reed use is small, but similar to the size that Blood and Wolfe used. One has to keep in mind when you analyze someone else's data and trying to relate three studies, there is always the possibility of a greater degree of error. This study, however, was an early response to the Moynihan report.

T King, C. The Negro maternal family: A product of an economic and a culture system. Social Forces, 1945, 24, 100-104.

This paper is an early analysis, following Frazier's lead, of the reasons behind the higher rate of Negro maternal families. Among the reasons associated with slavery are: (1) difficulty of Negro males in adjusting to responsibilities of heading a family after not being allowed to during slavery; (2) Negro women ceasing to develop an attitude of permanent attachment to a man through marriage after finding that a husband was not an advantage to them. King describes four kinds of maternal headed families but discusses that one previous research has shown was in the majority; unmarried mothers. He declines to put a moral onus on these women and say they had children out of moral weakness, but states that according to one author the women had children out of choice to help them in the economic struggle for survival.

Turning to these economic problems which are a factor in female headed households, King states that women of the maternal group can find employment more constantly than the man. This is why having a husband is a disadvantage, the woman is likely to have to support him too. Another reason the unmarried woman has children is that the black community does not ostracize these women, but accepts them on the basis of how they conduct themselves within the community. King concludes by saying that the maternal family will continue to exist as long as the economic insecurity of men exists; as long as public opinion allows the unmarried woman the right of motherhood without loss of social status; and as long as the educational level remains too low to raise the social standards to higher levels.

King, J. African survivals in the black American family. Journal of Afro-American Issues, 1976, 4, 153-167.

King discusses the cultural traits of black Americans that he believes have survived from the African past. The first one mentioned is dance. The blues and spiritual world is the second African survival. Songs, he believes, are functional to black Americans. A song that has survived is "Tar Baby", which King says is from the Ashanti tradition. Time is the third item that has survived from Africa. Black folks' time in this country and Africa is similar, yet different from white America. The next cultural trait to survive that King mentions is kinship ties. He states that these ties exist in Africa, during slavery, while moving up North and give moral support to the family.

King, as numerous other writers on black America have done, attempts to provide the links that carry over from the African past to today. Most of his links have been stated before, and other authors have tended to back up their claims with more evidence than King has. One's past is never completely erased but finding the evidence of the connection is the hardest part, and I do not believe King has done this.

E King, K. Power structure in low-income families. Florida State University, Study #49, 1966.

Early in his article King refers to an article by Pettigrew (1964). Pettigrew was one of the first researchers to comment that much of the black social pathology may be attributable to poverty rather than to the blacks themselves. King also refers to articles by Lewis (1965), Middleton and Putney (1960) in support of his hypothesis that urban black and white lower socioeconomic families are primarily syncratic.

His sample consisted of 127 black males, 187 black females, 72 white males, and 96 white females. These males and females were 9th grade students in Jacksonville, Florida. King gave each student the Herbst questionnaire and classified the responses accordingly. The questions dealt with who made decisions in the family. The results showed that black and white lower socioeconomic families were syncratic. He concludes by saying that the change in the black family is towards the white norm.

While King was one of the first researchers to look at the power structure in black families, I do not agree that the black family is moving towards the white norm because he does not lay enough ground work to make that assumption. He does cite studies that Moynihan should have been aware of, but did not use in his own report.

T Lewis, D. The black family: Socialization and sex roles. Phylon, 1975,
8 36, 221-237.

Lewis attempts to show that the black family has been heavily influenced by African culture. To show this, she relies on the work of Jahn (1960), a philosopher. She believes that the Afro-American culture has distinct socialization patterns and contrasts significantly with the Euro-American socialization patterns.

She cites the works by Young (1972) and Kagan (1964) to reinforce her positions. She believes that the Euro-American child rearing practice teaches children opposites. For example, men are aggressive, women are passive, men are independent, women are dependent, and men are self-confident, while women are having feelings of inadequacy. The Afro-American family is taught that the male or female can incorporate feelings of dependence and/or independence into their behavior. This belief comes from the African heritage and does not see the individual as having solely female or male behavior as the Euro-American culture does.

Lewis offers some interesting ideas, but does not use much empirical data to support her thesis. Some of her ideas about the socialization patterns seem logical, but further research needs to be done in the area.

E,Ed Mack, D. Where the black matriarchy theorists went wrong. Psychology Today, January 1971, 24, 86-87.

Mack felt that power within a family was related across economic lines, rather than racial or ethnic lines. She used 80 couples in her study. There were 20 black middle class couples, 20 black working class couples, 20 white middle class couples, and 20 white working class couples.

She had each couple fill out a questionnaire dealing with decision-making within their family. The husband and wife filled them out separately and then filled another one out together. Then, in a specified period of time, they reached a joint statement about questions dealing with politics and child rearing practices. The last item to be used in the research was role playing situation.

The results she found were that there were no significant differences between white and black families in the decision-making in the family. There were however, significant differences in the decisions made between classes. Her research was one of the earliest ones to discover that power differences in families were not a result of race, but one of class. Too often, in the past, researchers would compare lower socio-economic blacks with white middle-class families. The results would show a significant difference, but occupation and income were not controlled for in the studies. Mack's work then is very important in the evolution of the study of decision-making in the black family.

E McAdoo, J. L. An examination of interaction patterns between black fathers and their preschool children and their effects on the child's self-esteem. Paper presented at the Groves Conference on Marriage and the Family, May 5-8, 1977. (At Grossinger's Conference Center, Grossinger, N.Y.)

This interview study examined the types of frequence of verbal interactions between 36 black fathers and their children (19 boys, 17 girls). The fathers were vitally concerned about and involved in child-rearing decisions, and had warm nurturant interactions with these children.

E Maxwell, J. Rural Negro father participation in family activities. Rural Sociology, 1968, 33, 80-83.

Maxwell used the Herbst questionnaire and administered it to 190 11th and 12th grade students in a rural community in Georgia. The questionnaire looked at household tasks, child care, and control function, social function, and economic function. He was looking for any differences between lower class black boys with working and non-working mothers.

He found no significant differences between the lower class black families of working and non-working wives in the following areas: the number of family activities the father performed; the number of family activities the father shared with other members of the family. His research does not agree with the Moynihan report.

It would have been more beneficial if Maxwell had not narrowed his study to lower class working and non-working families. His research reinforces the position of the father sharing in family decision-making, but just deals with the lower class black family. It was good that he looked at rural families because too many researchers look at the urban black family.

T McBroom, P. The black matriarchy: Healthy or pathological? Science News, 1968, 94, 393-395.

The author believes that constant or sporadic unemployment of ghetto men helps maintain a matriarchy in about one-fourth of the nation's Negro families, and that this fact has been obscured by white sociologists who view the matriarchy as a contributor to social disentegration, delinquency, and male emasculation. She says that Patrick Moynihan failed to see that fatherless, broken homes might be "an adaptation to poverty with intrinsic strengths of its own." The family is often extended--and this is viewed as a source of cohesion, rather than disentegration. She then describes Lee Rainwater's five-year project which looked at both poor black and white families in St. Louis. Though the white residents were older and less educated than blacks, the median income for heads of white families was $5,000 and for blacks was only $3,350. The author believes that because of adaptations to unstable male employment, strong women emerged along with social and sexual attitudes that will not necessarily change even with full employment. Unemployed men are not totally rejected by the family; there often are congenial relations between fathers and children.

E Middleton, R., & Putney, S. Dominance in decisions in the family race and class differences. American Journal of Sociology, 1960, 65, 605-609.

Middleton and Putney found that the equalitarian pattern dominated the forty couples they researched when it came to decision-making in the family. There were 10 white couples whose husbands were professors, 10 couples whose husbands occupation was a skilled worker, 10 black couples whose husbands occupation was a professor and 10 black couples whose husbands were skilled workers.

A questionnaire was given to each couple and included fifteen questions in the following four areas: child care; purchases and living standards; recreation; and role attitudes. Each couple filled out a questionnaire individually and then filled the same one out jointly.

This was the first piece of research done that rejected the stereotype that black families are matriarchal. It is interesting to notice that this study was not cited by Moynihan in his report, though it was done five years before he released his report. The methodology is similar to ones that have been done in recent years.

Ed Miller, K., & Dreger, R. Comparative studies of black and whites in the United States. New York: Seminar Press, 1973. Pp. 405-445.

This section is written by Jacquelyn Jackson on family organization and ideology. She thinks that blacks have had a head start on whites in developing alternative familial patterns in the absence of a sufficient number of males. She spends a great deal of time using studies to support her contention that decision-making in black families are equalitarian, not matriarchial. She cites the studies of Maxwell (1968), Middleton and Putney (1960), Steinman and Fox (1970) who (1970) who found equalitarian patterns in black families. The above studies are only a few of the ones that she cites.

Her other sections deal with father absence, child bearing, child rearing, and familial, attitudinal, and behavior relationships. She also cites the numerous studies that have been done in these areas. In summarizing, she believes that black families do not have a distinct subculture as many researchers would have us believe. She has found too much variation in black families to believe this. She does, however, believe that there are similarities across socioeconomic backgrounds.

Jackson's article is probably one of the best for reviewing what has been done in recent years in the area of research for family dominance, child rearing, child bearing, and family attitudes and behavior. As one will quickly see some of the areas need considerable more research.

Ed Miller, K. S., & Dreger, R. M. Comparative studies of blacks and whites in the United States. New York: Seminar Press, 1973.

This will only summarize the authors section on psychotherapy. They review the literature on how the therapist's race may affect the psychotherapeutic relationship. The material in most of the studies reviewed reflects the experiences and views of the writers, and few offer empirical data. The authors first summarize non-research material. There is a review of studies which discuss problems encountered in a white therapist-black client relationship. The authors then deal with studies which discuss the black therapist-white client relationship. There is then a discussion of the four relevant research studies that have appeared which have included racial therapist-client variables. One study found that black counselees of both sexes stated that they would return to a black counselor whereas only one-third stated that they would return to see a white counselor. Another study found that depth of self-exploration was more intense when patients and lay counselors were of the same race and social class. The third study reported that highly prejudiced white therapists saw male and female black patients for a smaller number of sessions than did low prejudiced white therapists. The fourth study asked 83 white group psychotherapists to respond to a hypothetical situation which asked whether the therapist would place a black college graduate from a Southern college in a group composed of Southern whites. Thirty-five percent said yes, nineteen percent said no, and forty-six percent said they would discuss it with the group or the client. The main reasons given for the no response were that the black client would be upsetting and destructive to the group and that therapy should not be used as a social change instrument.

T Morgan, G. African survivals and the black subculture: The debate reopened. Journal of Social and Behavioral Sciences, 1972, 19(2), 11-20.

The author believes it would be "sterile to look for Africanisms in the black subculture today, not because they are not there, but because it would be too hard to prove that they are indeed Africanisms. Similar culture does not necessarily mean common origin, though it frequently does. Any similarities found in the two cultures could be accounted for by other plausible theses..." The author therefore sees his task as the discussion of the conditions which made it necessary to postulate a loss of Africanisms, and the refutation, logically, of the conclusion of no Africanisms. He postulates that the "free" black, one who had white ancestry, reacted to the constant claims of his inferiority by arguing that his ties with Africa had been broken and that over the years he had lost his African values. The darker field hands were not considered in these arguments and "on the plantations of the South continued to act pretty much as he had done in slavery along with restoration of many Africanisms." After the turn of the century two groups of Negroes differentiated themselves; those intellectuals whose strategy was integration, and those who believed that race hatred in the United States would never allow blacks equality and therefore emigration to Africa was the only realistic solution. The integrationists hypothesis was that African culture was obliterated during slavery and therefore present day blacks had no tie to Africa and their hopes of being happy in Arrica were unrealistic. Morgan then goes into various arguments of the obliterationists and tries to refute these arguments through historical research. He should have taken his own advice and not looked for Africanisms for he says that if the black man today finds it hard to work a full day, day after day this can possibly be tied into his ancestor's past life in AFrican. He says of the African male, "in their periods of freedom from duties, they made merry until it was again time to perform duties allocated to their sex. In slavery the concept of year round toil for a livelihood did not become a part of the slave male's thought whereas it was part and parcel to European thought." This perhaps shows the fallacy of trying to point directly to a belief or behavior today as a direct holdover from the culture of an ancestor very far removed.

T Moynihan, D. P. Employment, income, and the ordeal of the Negro family. In Talcott Parsons and Kenneth B. Clark (Eds.), The Negro American. Boston: Beacon, 1965. Pp. 134-159.

This article attempts to link the employment and income problem of the Negro man with the breakdown in the Negro family structure. Moynihan says there are two employment trends: the emergence of a Negro middle class that is on the whole doing very well and, the opportunities for the large mass of Negro workers in the lower ranges of training and education have not been improving and in many ways their circumstances have grown worse. This in turn, he believes, has

led to, or been accompanied by, a serious weakening of the Negro social structure, specifically of the Negro family. He then cites many employment and income statistics which show, pretty unequivocally, the two employment trends. He then cites the incidence of broken families and says that in these circumstances of unemployment and poverty, "the stability of the Negro family, still greviously impaired by the heritage of slavery and segregation, would seem to have been weakening still further." The fundamental problem is the position of the Negro male. Three effects of the underemployment of the Negro father are broken homes, increase in welfare dependency among Negro families, and a "tangle of pathology" which refers to a cumulative and circular effect of disability and disadvantage. Moynihan then concludes with the belief that the most pressing question for American social policy is whether the first step should be to provide full employment to Negro men so that the impact of unemployment on the family structure would be removed. He then says that there is evidence that it is too late, that genuine structural damage has already occurred and more employment of the Negro male would not help reverse the disentegration of black families. Even though he admits that proof of causal relationships between economic phenomenon and social phenomenon is a complex matter he attempts to tie male employment and AFDC rates, and male employment and marital separation rates into a causal relationship. Though Negro male unemployment dropped during the sixties, AFDC rates and separation rates of nonwhite married women continued to rise. There is no attempt by Moynihan to offer a complex explanation for these correlations, or to look for other reasons behind these findings.

T Myrdal, G. The Negro problem and modern democracy: An American dilemma. New York: Harper and Row, 1962.

Theoretically, Myrdal takes his analysis of the Negro family from Frazier, and says that the instabilities of the Negro family are mainly forms of social pathology which, for the most part, are created by the caste process and slavery. He details why Negroes did not overall develop strong marital bonds during slavery, and how migration to the cities after emancipation put new strains on family unity. However, Myrdal believes that Negroes have certain other cultural traits which tend to lessen the disorganizating effects of illegitimacy and broken homes. Common-law marriages and illegitimacy are not seriously condemned within the Negro community, except in the upper classes. There are few unwanted children, which he sees as a healthy social attitude. Though he sees the Negro family as unstable "...the important thing is that the Negro lower classes, especially in the rural South, have built up a type of family organization conducive to social health, even though the practices are outside the American mainstream." This is a fascinating conclusion, which he drew in 1944, when this book was first published. Frazier himself saw illegitimacy only as a sign of disorganization. This book is Myrdal's report from a study commissioned in 1938 by the Carnegie Corporation of New York. He was chosen instead

of an American because the Corporation felt it to be essential that such a study be made under the direction of a person who would be free from the presuppositions and emotional charges all Americans share to a greater or lesser degree on this subject.

T Nobles, N. Africanity: It's role in black families. Black Scholar, 1974, 5(9), 10-17.

Nobles takes the view, which only recently has come into serious contention, that the sense of oneness and interdependence associated with African philosophies was a strength to the slaves, and was not destroyed by slavery and subsequent discrimination. After detailing the African philosophical heritage, Nobles argues that the strong kinship bonds found in black extended families are positive functional reflections of the sense of Africanity in black communities. Nobles believes that the slave experience simply reinforced, not destroyed, the sense of oneness of being, survival of the tribe (family), and collective responsibility found in many behaviors and expressions of black families and individuals today. He believes that the special bond between a black mother and child was not caused by slavery's definition of the family, but by the African philosophical orientation that places a special value on children because they represent the continuity of life. This is one of those psychological theories that would be impossible to empirically validate, but, as in many beliefs, empirical validation is not necessary for the belief to be positive and identity enhancing as Nobles take this belief to be.

E Parker, S., & Kleiner, R. Social and psychological dimensions of the family role performances of the Negro male. Journal of Marriage and the Family, August 1969, 500-506.

The data for this study was collected in 1960. It included 1,489 individuals from a black community in Philadelphia. Another group of individuals from the ages of 20-60 were also involved. This latter group numbered 1,423 and were identified as being mentally ill. Only married males were used in both groups. The males were asked to comment on the following four questions: who makes money decisions in the family, who makes moving decisions, who takes responsibility for child rearing, and do you talk things over with your wife when they bother you?

The results showed that 90% of the community responses and a little less of the mentally ill said they would like to do all four. Parker and Kleiner report that "a more adequate interpretation of the data would involve the hypothesis that the problems encountered by the black male in the areas of employment, housing, and general social discrimination result in feelings of failure and inadequacy and an inability to perform his family role adequately."

They still assume the male is inadequate in the family though later literature is not saying that at all. It would have also been better if they could have used some other groups to make tests on concerning the family. The instrument that they used for testing could

probably have been developed more.

T,E Rainwater, L. Crucible of identity: The Negro lower-class family. In Talcott Parsons and Kenneth B. Clark (Eds.), The Negro American. Boston: Beacon Press, 1967. Pp. 160-204.

This article is a descriptive analysis of slum Negro family patterns as these reflect and sustain Negroes' adaptations to the economic, social, and personal situation into which they are born and in which they must live. In essence, this is an attempt to show that certain adaptations made by blacks in the face of poverty and racism, though enabling them to survive in the ghetto, also generate aggressiveness toward the self and others causing blacks to inflict suffering on themselves and others.

According to the author, lower-class blacks consider a stable, family centered way of life superior to the situations they often find themselves in, such as female-headed households. Many make the effort to establish such a stable family but find it impossible to do so because of economic disabilities or "because they are not able to sustain in their day-to-day lives the ideals which they hold." Summarizing Rainwater's analysis of the black man's role, "The man learns that he exposes himself to the least risk of failure when he does not assume a husband's and father's responsibilities, but instead counts on his ability to court women and to ingratiate himself with them." Rainwater does not mention how many families were included in his study, though he says "a small group of families". Though he indicates that stable, long-term two-parent families existed in the housing project studied, he gives no indication that the husband and father role was any different than the essentially inactive part played by husbands in shorter term marriages.

Ed Rainwater, L. The Moynihan Report and the politics of controversy. Cambridge: M.I.T. Press, 1967.

This is a detailed examination of the controversy surrounding the publication of The Negro Family: The Case for National Action by Daniel P. Moynihan for the United States Department of Labor in 1965. The authors set as their main tasks the examination of the relationship of social science endeavors to public policy formation, and the study of the complex interactions between the federal government and the civil rights organizations. They interviewed 61 individuals who seemed to be the main participants in the controversy, and they collected an extensive file of press clippings and magazine articles relating to the report and the surrounding controversy. The authors first focus on the political situation of the government and the civil rights movement during the time and report was written. Next, the authors describe Moynihan's strategy and include the total report itself. They note that the report was a hybrid, combining certain social science facts with an argument for a particular policy position. Moynihan sought to present a sharply focused argument leading to the conclusion that the government's economic and social welfare programs

should be systematically designed to encourage the stability of the Negro family, meaning the intact nuclear family. A chapter on initial press reactions to the report follows and then a most important chapter on how the report could have been changed if it had been known that it would turn into a public report. The next several chapters explore various civil rights reactions, governmental opposition and commentary from the intellectual community. For those interested in social science research and policy making this is a classic work and a must reading.

E Rosen, L. Matriarchy and lower class Negro male delinquency. Social Problems, 1973, 17, 175-189.

This study used 921 black males aged 13-15. These males were lower class and from an area defined as high in juvenile delinquency. The study was a secondary analysis of existing data. Area probability sampling procedure was used. For the study delinquency was defined as having an official police record.

Rosen found no correlation between matriarchy and juvenile delinquency. He goes on to agree with Clifford Shaw, who has written about juvenile delinquency, that the area or neighborhood is the most important determinant in delinquency rather than the kind of household or family the youth may come from.

Though the research is a secondary analysis, it does shed some light on a contemporary problem--juvenile delinquency and father absence or mother dominance. If this is the case, then a lot more money should be going into neighborhoods to alleviate some of the problem. The data is limited because the researcher only asks the males three questions.

C,E Sanger, C. J., Brayboy, T. L., Waxenberg, B. R. Black ghetto family in therapy: A laboratory experience. New York: Grove Press, 1970.

The authors believe that community mental health centers are failing to reach urban blacks and therapists are falling to develop workable methods for treatment and prevention. Old therapeutic methods and goals are failing to help black "multiproblem" families. This book was designed to focus attention on what therapists are actually doing with black ghetto families. The approach used is a role play situation where a group of black mental health professionals simulate a black ghetto family forced to go to a family therapist by the polic because the father beats up the mother on occasion. Four family therapist, Nathan Ackerman, Thomas Brayboy, Robert MacGregor, and Carl Whitaker, demonstrated in a thirty minute session how they would begin therapy with such a family. At the end of each session the therapist gives his rationale for proceeding as he did. The sessions are followed by a chapter of audience questions, and answers by the therapists. Each of the players in the family were asked six to eight weeks after the demonstration how they felt about the sessions, what they remembered liking or disliking. The final chapter deals with the fact that many if not most middle class white therapists have not

acknowledged a hard core of anger, disgust and fear of blacks caused by their simply being members of the dominant group in a racist society. These feelings may often come to the fore in an intense family therapy situation.

Ed Scanzoni, J. The black family in modern society. Boston: Allyn and Bacon, 1971.

This study is one that focuses on the 67% of black families that are headed by a man and a woman. He interviewed 400 individuals, one spouse in each family. The sex of the interviewee was predesignated. All the interviewers were black.

The results generally found that many of the families grew up with parents who had middle class goals and ideas. Some of the problems that have been associated with the black family can be traced to poverty, discrimination, and racism rather than family background.

This book included too much to present here. It is one of the few books or research reports that included the middle class black family and made numerous statements about them as a group. It is an excellent presentation of data that is seldom referred to by other researchers. Scanzoni has attempted to eliminate as much bias as possible in the instrument and obtain as much usable data as possible.

T,E Schulz, D. A. Variations in the father role in complete families in the Negro lower class. Social Science Quarterly, December 1968, 49, 651-659.

The purpose of this study was to "describe and analyze some of the variations in the husband-father role in the category that is ordinarily thought of a 'married'." Schulz focused on ten lower-class Negro families living in a large public housing project. Most of the data was collected by participant observation and open ended interviewing. Assessment of the role played by the father in each household was based upon information obtained from most, if not all, family members, plus observations of family interaction. Based on three variables: (1) the "strength of the conjugal bond", (2) support given by the father to his family, and (3) the relationship of the father to the children, the researchers divided the five complete families into three types of father roles played. The author follows with a description of the "indiscreet free man", the "discreet free man", and the "monogamous father". Schulz believes that the family best able to survive as a family unit in the ghetto typically has a father who is a "discreet free man". This conclusion seems a bit premature from looking at only five complete ghetto families.

E, Ed Schulz, D. Coming up black. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall, 1969.

David Schulz spent 3-1/2 years studying ten families in a large housing project. Five of the families were complete with husband and wife present (Schulz's terminology). Five other families did not have a steady male present. The housing project consisted of 33 eleven story buildings. Schulz's role was one of interviewer-

observer.

For most of the families masculinity components were revealed in their recollections about their childhood. There was an early orientation towards the work ethic which centered around the farm or unskilled labor. A minimum of responsibility was expected from the male around the house.

Schulz says, "The problem of the Black lower-class family--from the inevitably biased point of view of the dominant middle class--is, therefore; not so much a matter of the absence of a father as it is the absence of an adequate masculine role model enabling adaptation to the values of the larger culture." Schulz does see the male as providing different models for the children. The main model would be one of survival in the culture. The father taught the children how to survive in the ghetto.

Schulz ranked the fathers in the housing project according to increased marginality. The six types of fathers were: (1) monogamous father, (2) discreet free man, (3) indiscreet free man/quasi father, (4) supportive biological father, (5) supportive companion, and (6) pimp. He says any father is not necessarily better than no father at all. The father has influence over his son's development when the son enters the teenage years. The father has influence over his daughter until she becomes a teenager.

Though the study just looked at lower income black families, it provides us with information in the same way that Tally's Corner, Soulside, and All Our Kin did. Schulz paints a realistic picture of 10 families living in a "ghetto". The thing to remember is that the families are all dealing with the situation and many have middle class goals which they may or may not attain. Schulz does an excellent job of presenting the frustrations many black males felt in the situation they were living in.

T,E Schulz, D. A. The role of the boyfriend in lower-class Negro life. In C. V. Willie (Ed.), The family life of black people. Columbus, Ohio: Merrill. Pp. 231-243.

This is from the same study mentioned previously, except it is based mainly on observations and interviews of 38 subjects living in ten families. Schulz argues that "in the role of boyfriend, Negro men are able to express much more concern for their women, and do in fact care for them and their children to a much greater extent that is commonly acknowledged." This kind of quasi-familial relationship can be seen as a model of adaptation to the oppression and deprivation of their environment. Schulz mentions that because his sample is small and non-random he cannot state with certainty how extensive his generalizations about the boyfriend role are. He divides the roles the boyfriend can play into four types: the quasi-father, the supportive biological father, the supportive companion, and the pimp. The author says that a man may play one or more of these four roles in his life as his situation and desires change, and he makes the statement that "most men can play, if they so desire, the role of supportive

biological father throughout most of their lives since almost every male has had at least one child out of wedlock." Schulz does not bother to mention where he gets this information. He argues for the view that improved income and job opportunities for the lower class Negro male will result in more of these relationships terminating in marriages and, in general, more stability in family life.

T Spaights, E. Some dynamics of the black family. Negro Educational Review, 1973, 24(3-4), 127-137.

The author believes that the problem of much of the social science research on black families in the 1960's was that studies on poverty were over-represented with black families and focused on the negative aspects of the poverty-stricken black family. The black family was pictured only in a deviant light. He states that lower class black families should be compared with lower class white families, not all white families. No studies have been done on the 75 percent of black families who have stable marriages or the 90 percent who are self-supporting. He believes the Moynihan Report convinced some policy makers that the problems faced by blacks are all due to a weak family structure.

Spaights then discusses research which he feels is done well and sheds a more positive light on the structures and functions of the black family. Topics for research could include, he feels, child abuse, delinquency, the myth of the matriarchy, problems of the middle class and working women. He concludes with "it is time that the great strengths of the black family be recognized throughout American society."

T,E Stack, C. All our kin. New York: Harper and Row, 1974.

Stack did this research by using the participant-observer method. Although she was white, it did not seem to matter from her observations and feelings to the other people in the community after a length of time.

Her philosophy, after observing people in the community, can be summed up in the following quote, "But early on, Hylan Lewis (1965), Hannerz (1969), Liewbow (1967), and Valentine (1968) demonstrate that many of the features alleged to characterize the culture of poverty--unemployment, low wages, crowded living quarters--are simply definitions of poverty itself, not of a distinct culture." She argues, at least for low income black males, that since they do not have access to steady employment it is difficult to support a family and perform the instrumental roles.

If the mother has a boyfriend, it is commonly assumed that he will participate in some of the parental roles. The family of the father's, if they are separated, has rights within the community to observe and judge if the mother is raising the child right.

Stack believes that, "most discussion of sex roles in the black community have looked at interpersonnel relationships between women and men from a male point of view." However, the single most important factor that affects interpersonnel relationships in the community is unemployment. Couples rarely chance marriage until the man has a

job.

To get a clearer picture of what is involved in living in a poverty situation, one should read this book. One must keep in mind, however, that this is not the situation for all black people. Stack does an excellent job of showing the frustration within the community having to deal with unemployment, welfare, and discrimination. Her book deals with both men and women, but the emphasis is from the woman's point of view.

T,E Staples, R. The black family: Essays and stories. Belmont, California: Wadsworth Publishing Company, 1971.

This book is a series of readings that Staples has put together covering the various aspects of the black family. He begins by including the works of Elkins, Frazier, and Billingsley to give the reader some general background information. The second section deals with the Moynihan report and the reaction to it by Ryan and Carper.

Part two of the book covers the dyad. Staples has selected readings dealing with premarital dating patterns, sexual behavior, male sex roles, female sex roles, and husbands and wives. Writers and researchers in this section include: Staples, Lewis, Schulz, Broderick, Clark, Hare, Fanon, Stokes, Rainwater, and Frazier.

Part three deals specifically with the family. Such areas as parental roles and socialization processes, child bearing, and personality development and the problems of youth are dealt with in this section. Schulz's article entitled, "Variations in the father role in complete families of the Negro lower class" is most interesting and is taken from his book, Coming Up Black.

The book is structured in such a way that we lead up to the fourth section--Problems. Here, in this section, Staples has taken readings to deal with the following problems: family disorganization and reorganization; black and white; sex and marriage; socioeconomic characteristics.

This series of readings is probably the best book available dealing with the black family. The readings cover a broad variety of topics, philosophies, and styles of writing. It is probably the best book that enables the reader to get a quick and realiable overview of the research and general trend of research dealing with the black family.

E,Ed Staples, R. Towards a sociology of the black family: A theoretical and methodological assessment. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1971, 119-138.

Staples attempts to construct a picture of the research that has been done on the black family and to show the theory and methodology that has been developing. He begins by talking about Frazier, Moynihan, Rainwater, and other researchers' works in the early to mid-1960's. He described how some of Frazier's ideas had changed and why. He presents the ideas of these early researchers and those that tend

to see the black family as dysfunctional. He then refutes much of their research methods.

Most of the paper is spent citing other researchers to buttress the argument that the black family is not dysfunctional, but rather has a great deal of strength, but researchers in the past have looked at the lower class black family and compared it to the white middle class family.

This is one of the best articles written about the black family. It is one of the few that looks at the different works other researchers have done and critiques them. Staples does an excellent job of helping the reader see that there is a sociology of the black family and that it is important for family researchers to deal with that.

T,Ed Staples, R. Towards a sociology of the black family: A theoretical and methodological assessment. In C. B. Broderick (Ed.), A decade of family research and action. Minneapolis: National Council of Family Relations, 1971. Pp. 141-160.

Staples begins by noting the two broad levels of analysis characterizing most research on the black family: culture vs. class. A researcher who took the former approach would base his analysis of black family life on historical experiences of the black race. Black historical experience is usually considered the basic cause for the development of a black, lower-class culture by these researchers. For those who take the latter approach, using class as the primary causal variable for black family behavior, it is the economic deprivation of black and white lower-class families that makes it difficult to sustain a stable family. In the first section of his article, Staples critiques five major theorists in the study of the black family and details methodological and theoretical weaknesses of each approach. The five theorists are E. Franklin Frazier, Daniel P. Moynihan, Lee Rainwater, Jessie Bernard, and Andrew Billingsley.

The next section deals with micro-sociological research into the black family in which he covers research [illegible] dyadic relationships, female-headed households, and power and decision making. His next section deals with research into parental roles. In his final section Staples discusses steps needed to move toward a sociology of the black family. From his critique of the literature he feels that white values and standards have been imposed on the study of black family life and the result has been that "the black family continues to be defined as a pathological unit whose unique way of functioning sustains the conditions of its oppression." He mentions voids in our knowledge of black family life which need study: research focusing on the black family's interactional processes, research from different parts of the country, probably ungeneralizable to black families from other regions, research on the middle and later years in black families, and middle class patterns of black family life. Staples finds fault with both the culture and class approach, though he feels there is some merit in the class position. What he would like to see is more research into the black culture, not to discover how this culture negatively

affects black families or individuals, but how this culture has become a positive expression of black people's uniqueness.

T Staples, R. The black family in evolutionary perspective. Black Scholar, 1974, 59, 2-10.

In this article Staples traces black family patterns from Africa to the present--and offers some thoughts on future trends. He believes the family should be viewed as an adaptive unit, "when times have been harsh, it has been a strong and resilient institution." In times of relative prosperity or group disunity it has weakened under the stresses common to a fragile arrangement of diverse personalities. He cites research which dispells the notion that marriage was lowly valued by slaves. Despite the obstacles of slavery and discrimination after emancipation, prior to 1917 over 90 percent of all black children were born in wedlock and the family remained "the most important institutional element in the black struggle for survival".

In discussing marriage patterns, Staples believes that being black and poor makes marriage a less than viable institution for black people. They are simply choosing not to take formal marriage vows, recognizing the almost inevitability that break-ups will occur. He cites the critical shortage of black males as a prime reason monogamous marriage may not be a choice for many. In conclusion, he feels that it is quite likely the majority of black households will be headed by women by 1980, which would mean that "blacks will have to organize functions of the family through the extended kinship system".

Ed,T Staples, R. The black family revisited: A review and a preview. Journal of Social and Behavioral Sciences, 1974, 20, 65-78.

Staples refers to one of his common themes, that during the period from 1965-1970 the majority of white family research is based on the middle class, white families and most of the black research is based on the lower 25 percent of the black class strata.

Staples makes an interesting comment concerning women's liberation. He says, "What was known as the notorious matriarchy among blacks is now regarded as women's liberation in the white community. The common-law marriages (or shacking up) that existed among blacks has been redefined and re-evaluated as heterosexual cohabitation for whites."

Staples discusses the family as they relate to Pan Africanism, historical materialism, and domestic colonialism. He discusses some alternatives the black family may have to take because of the low ratio of black men to black women.

Staples discusses one of the most interesting phenomenas that take place when one talks about the black family. Certain aspects of the supposed bad side of the black family were criticized until the white culture began experiencing the same phenomena. Obviously the white culture has much to learn from minority families, and to stop making value judgments, or judgments with no empirical base, because at some point in time white families may take on the same characteristics.

In the article, Staples takes a hard look at where the black family has been and where it may be heading in the future.

Ed Staples, R. Introduction to black sociology. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1976. Pp. 113-149.

By citing a number of studies, Staples argues that one finds no special status or authority associated with roles in the black family. Within the black nuclear family there is a fluid interchanging of roles. Staples feels that this role flexibility is a result of the economic situation most blacks face. Thus, instrumental and expressive roles, within the black family are interchanged. In doing research on the black family, one has to keep in mind that the majority of black families are headed by a husband and wife. The research in the past has tended to look at the white middle class while looking at the black lower class family.

Staples spends a great deal of time looking at the black woman. He says, "while the black women has needed to be strong in order for the black family to survive, she has not necessarily been dominant." The black woman has usually found herself working, after getting married to help the family live a decent life, and in some cases to make the difference between poverty and lower middle class living. An additional factor that many researchers neglect is poverty and racism. These two create additional problems with black male and female relationships. The black woman is encouraged to be independent because she may have to carry the economic or instrumental role solely in the family.

This article could be viewed as having a number of unresolved questions. Does the black man need to reassert himself in the black community? Is it time for the black woman to take a more passive role in the relationship? Staples believes that it is time to consider these questions and look at the relationships black men have with black women. He looks at what is happening in Black Africa and also what is happening within certain black nationalist groups in this country. The black women, in these situations, are assuming passive roles. In the current climate of this country, in regards to women, Staples raised some provocative issues.

T Tenhouten, W. The black family: Myth and reality. Psychiatry, May 1970, 33, 145-173.

This papers looks at the structure of black and white families in the U.S. Many people have felt there were differences that were pronounced in the structure of black and white families. White families were seen as equalitarian or patriarchal, with the wife subdominant to the husband. The black families were viewed as being matriarchal, with the wife the dominant and stable member and the husband subdominant. Tenhouten wants to evaluate these generalizations in this article.

Tenhouten begins by reviewing the literature, first with Frazier (1948, 1957) and then moving on the Aldous (1969), Blodd and Wolfe (1955), Parker and Kleiner (1969), Moynihan (1965), Liebow (1967), and

many others. After this literature review he proceeds to discuss illegitimacy rates, female-headed families, and unemployment rates. These last three items are discussed in response to the Moynihan report.

The study that Tenhouten did took place in the county of Los Angeles. A stratified random sampling technique was used to select participants to interview. Four interviews were given and included the husband, wife, and both children. "The interviews were used to gather data on the families' socioeconomic, migratory, and structural histories, on social interaction pertaining to children's educational and occupational plans and aspirations, and on values and attitudes relevant to child socialization."

Tenhouten found that lower-class black husbands are higher on male dominance ideology than middle-class black and lower- and middle-class white husbands. For parental power, lower-class parents are more apt to regard child rearing as a mother's job than middle-class parents, but there are no within-class race differences.

This study appears to be one of the best designed studies on the structure of black and white families. Within that structure, Tenhouten looks at power in the parental role and also the conjugal role. His results contradict what Moynihan has written. One criticism could be that the study was conducted only in one metropolitan area.

C Thomas, A., & Sillen, S. Racism and psychiatry. New York: Brunner/Mazel. 1972.

This review will cover two chapters, Chaper Six, Family and Fantasy and Chapter Ten, The Black Patient: Separate and Unequal. The authors begin with the very important statement that there is no one-to-one relationship between family structure and personality development. The broken home does not necessarily breed delinquency; nor does the intact home assure socially approved behavior. The hazards of generalizations about the influence of the family on children is especially pertinant to black families who have been given less systematic study than white families. The authors find that referral agencies and psychiatric clinics resist taking black patients for they assume that blacks are poor candidates for intensive psychotherapy. The authors state that if the clinician fails to take into account special environmental circumstances, he will misjudge normal behavior as pathological. However, the authors feel it would be dehumanizing to deny that like all other persons, the black person has conflict and ambivalences that do not derive from the racist environment. The last section deals with the actual relationship between a white therapist and a black client and details certain errors that a white therapist may easily fall into. Finally the authors call for a development of modes of therapy designed to meet the special needs of the urban poor, as opposed to the conventional modalities largely based on the need of white middle-class patients. Unfortunately, the authors do not have explicit examples of what they mean in this regard.

T,E TenHouten, W. D. The black family: Myth and reality. Psychiatry, 1970, 33, 145-173.

In this article, the author evaluates the generalizations involved in the stereotype of the black family as matriarchal. He begins with E. Franklin Frazier's description of black families and continues with descriptions and critical re-evaluations of the historical and socio-economic explanations of the development of the matriarchal black family. The two major sections of the article are an evaluation of the empirical evidence used by Moynihan in his Department of Labor study, The Negro Family: The Case for National Action, and a description of an empirical study of black and white families to test the thesis of male subdominance and female dominance in the black family. This is a very good analysis of the basic theoretical and methodological problems associated with Moynihan's report. TenHouten's study does not support Moynihan's view of the lower-class black family as matrearchal and disorganized.

T,E Wasserman, H. L. The absent father in Negro families: Cause or symptom? Paper presented at the National Conference on Social Welfare, San Francisco, California, May 24, 1968.

This study focused on the family structure in a lower class Negro population as a presumed causal factor in the school achievement of boys within these families. Specifically, the author wanted to know whether having a father in the home made any difference in the boy's school achievement. The sample consisted of 117 Negro families, living in a low income housing development and including at least one son, between the ages of ten and fifteen. There were 45 father present and 46 father absent households, the rest put into a mixed category. This article discussed only the father present and absent groups. Mothers did not differ markedly in their overall background characteristics or style of life, though husbandless mothers as a group had somewhat smaller families, were more likely to receive public welfare and to have full time employment outside the home.

The results indicated that there were no statistically significant differences between groups on the school performance index. When symptoms of nervousness or internalized emotional conflict were examined, the father absent boys included 74% with a high incidence of symptoms compared with 50% of boys within intact families. Boys from fatherless homes were reported more of a behavioral problem both by their mothers and by their schools than were boys from intact families.

Ed Whittington, J. Some approaches to Afro-American family structure. Journal of Social and Behavioral Sciences, 1972, 19, 18-37.

This is a review of seven different approaches to the analysis of the Negro family in America. These approaches are: (1) survival of West African patterns; (2) the social structure of slavery and plantation life; (3) the influence of European customs; (4) ecological conditions; (5) demographic variables; (6) socioeconomic status of males,

and; (7) type of mating system.

Whittington discusses the theoretical and methodological problems inherent in each approach and then gives his opinion as to the best approach, a combination of structural-functional and culture-historical. He finds three serious deficiencies in other approaches. They are: (1) concentration on matrifocality and lack of attention to other forms of family organization; (2) emphasis on matrifocality as disorganized or pathological; and (3) correlational studies, especially between demographic conditions and family organization, which do not pay sufficient attention to elimination of alternate connections. The different family forms should be studied as adaptive mechanisms. Whittington feels that "to understand the reasons for the observed patterns in Afro-American family composition and organization we must determine the range of these role definitions and the conditions which would cause the selection of any of the possible alternatives."

Ed Yancey, W. Going down home: Family structure and the urban trap. Social Science Quarterly, 1972, 52, 893-906.

Yancey begins the article with a literature review of the black family. Yancey argues that the migration from the rural area to the urban areas accounts for the break down in the black family. Yet, he goes on to say, that it may not just be the urbanization process, but the resulting poverty after moving to the urban area that may be the problem.

Yancey argues that if the family has no kin and moves to an urban area it experiences a great many difficulties that rural families do not experience because of their kin network. Yancey argues that there really isn't a black matriarchy and urban policy makers should not be attempting to deal with that so much as the issues of neighborhood decline, racism, and poverty.

Yancey does not present much of a convincing argument. He tells us little that we do not already know and supports his thesis with little supportive data. He does have an interesting idea, but it should be looked at in further depth.

E Young, V. Family and childhood in a Southern Negro community. American Anthropology, 1972, 72, 269-288.

Young observed and recorded the behavior of parents and children in their homes. The visits lasted 1-1/2 to 3 hours and occurred 2-4 times. Thirty-four households were closely observed and 12 were less closely observed. There were 42 children under the age of 3, 16 children aged 3-6, and 28 children aged 6-14. The people lived in three black sections in town and one rural community.

The majority of households had the husband present. The black families tended to maintain strong ties over 3-4 generations. Both the man and woman interacted with the children, especially when they were young. The father provided a great deal of nurturing. There was a great deal of intimate interaction with babies. Around the age of three a marked change took place, or almost a complete cessation

of the close relationship with the mother and father and shift in orientation to the children's playgroup. The oldest child in the family, whether a boy or a girl took on a mothering role in regards to younger children.

This is one of the first studies to look at the relationship black fathers had with their children and how these children were raised. She points out some differences that researchers in the past have not mentioned. She also points out that there is an equalitarian relationship within the black family. Her methodology could perhaps be criticized for not having a lot of objective measures.

P 23 Atkin, E., & Rubin, E. Part-time father. New York: Signet, 1976.

Part-Time Father, written as a guide to a divorced father's relationship with his children, includes a section entitled "Fathers and Sons and Daughters" which focuses on problems that arise when children live full-time with their father. It is asserted, without supporting data, that most of these children "are going through a stage of development known as adolescence", so the emphasis is on father-adolescent interaction.

This book leaves much to be desired, and, in fact the psychological soundness of advice given to the single father must be questioned in many instances.

Atkin and Rubin seem to be especially concerned with what they perceive as a very negative reaction to the single parent family, and, in particular, to one headed by a man.

Their discussion of fathers relating to their adolescent children is heavily Freudian, and their comments present a bleak view of parent-child interaction. The authors are to be criticized for making sweeping generalizations which could potentially influence many a divorced father. In doing so they are apparently oblivious to the need for clarification and substantiation of their perspective.

If we take Atkin and Rubin's word for it, parenting is nothing but sheer torture and can only be worse for the single parent...But, "with luck, your grown-up children may begin to enjoy your company. About this time, it may be solacing to know, they will start having trouble with their own children. And will come to you for counsel."

P 23 Bettelheim, B. Fathers shouldn't try to be mothers. Parents' Magazine, October 1956, 40 & 125-128.

This is a classic article, a "must" for anyone at all interested in a man's functioning as a father. The beliefs expressed in this article, espoused by the Freudians and endorsed by many people, lend credence to the difficult battle men have to face if they want to enjoy and grow from their parenting experiences.

Bettelheim begins by lamenting the plight of the modern father whose role in the family is extremely ambiguous and afforded no respect by other family members. All they want and expect is for the father to deliver material goods. Cartoons, story books, television shows portray fathers as bumbling idiots; the mother asking father to be concerned about the day's events at home with the children and asking the father to assume some responsibility while he is home is interpreted by Bettelheim as indicating that the father does not perform any hard work while he is away from home during the day.

He proceeds to ponder the dilemma of how a father of today is to determine how he should relate to his children. Though fathers are now advised to participate in infant care, Bettelheim contends that this is poor advice "because the male physiology and that part of his psychology based on it are not geared to infant care". Feeding a child, after all, adds nothing to a man's sense of fatherhood.

A few quotes reproduce the flavor of the article as a whole:

"The completion of womanhood is largely through motherhood, but fulfillment of manhood is not achieved largely through fatherhood. The fulfillment of manhood is achieved by making a contribution to society as a whole, an impulse which is quickened when a responsible man becomes a father...the relationship between father and child... is built around a man's function in society: moral, economic, political."

For Bettelheim, mothers always take the part of the child, see things the child's way no matter what. The father, of course, can be relied on to give good, objective, sound advice, to be the significant someone who considers the far-reaching implications and consequences of all situations.

P 23 Biller, H., & Meredith, D. Father power. New York: Anchor Books, 1975.

The authors describe this book as a step-by-step approach for fathers "to achieve identity as active child-rearers" to learn to "participate equally with mothers in bringing up children". It is an attempt to cover the entire gamut of relationships the father enjoys in the family as well as the various traits the development of which he influences in his children.

The advice offerred to fathers is very simplified and contains many absolutes. Instead of facilitating the development of openness and honesty in parent-child relationships, the authors appear to be encouraging the many forms of game-playing that perpetuate poor relationships in general.

The authors take information, apparently from research however none is cited, and draw borad, sweeping conclusions instead of proposing hypotheses. In cookbook fashion, men are told what they "should" do for and with their children to achieve certain developmental outcomes. Wouldn't it be nice if human relationships were as cut and dried as the authors make them appear? Primarily, there is a strong negative reaction to the use of the term "power" when this book is supposed to be talking about the development of intense, meaningful, giving relationships between men and their children.

Paying particular attention to the chapter entitled, "Divorced fathers, step fathers, and single fathers", the authors reinforce the notion that the best family is the intact, nuclear family and that divorces do damage. They say that children of divorce are more likely to get divorced themselves and are more likely to give up on relationships in general because of what they have seen happen between their parents. However, no statistics nor references are cited to support these contentions. Very few suggestions are offerred for what a "good" father "should" do outside of the context of a family where both parents are present. A large percentage of the section on single parent fathers is devoted to finding a new wife and mother for the child. This book is indeed laden with values.

P 16 Breitbart, E. For two-parent families, the work is never done. Seven Days, March 28, 1977, 1(4), 45-46.

Breitbart's review of Levine's book, Who will raise the children (1975), succintly raises several criticisms of this work. It does this, however, in the spirit of affirming not only the struggle of men "who had chosen to be involved directly in their children's lives", but also Levine's attempt to write about these men.

Welcoming information about such social experiments as paternity leave for fathers in Sweden, Breitbart asks for more information about developments in Russia, China, or Cuba. The thrust of his criticism is that while Levine analyzes the ways American society "conspires against men who do want to spend more time with their children", his "examples and solutions tend to be individualistic ones."

For Breitbart, Levine's examples are limited and somehow too successful: they are middle-class men "who have the freedom to choose their roles...men who have achieved, or come to terms with the dominant values of the society"--and because of this, their stories remain distant from the trials of child caring done by men at lower income levels.

He concludes by stating that though Levine is correct in his assumption that the real sharing of child care would mean "questioning our existing economic structure and the competitive, individualistic, achievement-oriented ethic that underlies it", his arguments for such sharing are too concerned with the needs of business and industry. (Part-time employee-fathers are more productive than they were before; taking a salary cut, they do in three days what they formerly did in five!)

Breitbart perceives that this line of argument avoids the issue of the quality of work in this society, of how one's sense of human worth at work affects one's ability to parent, and asserts that, "...as long as the real options for fathers and mothers remain the prerogative of a few and child caring is seen as an individual responsibility, the society as a whole will not change..."

Breitbart's criticisms, as well as his praise of Levine's work as "an important first step in the right direction", are well-taken. They point to the need to examine more thoroughly the social dimension of the immediate situational difficulties faced by each family unit, each individual, in this society.

T 1 Burgess, J. K. The single-parent family: A social and sociological problem. The Family Coordinator, 1970, 19, 137-144.

Burgess covers a lot of ground in this article and is fairly successful in presenting a concise overview of the single parent family, as treated in the field of research and as seen by society at large.

She states that the major shortcoming of much of the research done in this area lies with the "overemphasis upon the importance of identification with the same-sex parent". This preoccupation with sex-role development has led researchers to ignore a multitude of other

variables which are also important components of personality development. Citing Herzog and Sudia (1965), it is clear to Burgess that the one-parent family does not benefit from generalizations based on "fragmentary studies undertaken to test fragments of theories which are themselves under challenge".

In order to make some progress with respect to society's views of single parenthood, the single parent family must be looked at "as a form of the family in its own right". In doing this, we cannot underestimate the effects of social prejudices on these families, not only on the personality development of the children, but also on adjustment of the parent(s).

Burgess discusses the potentially positive aspects of family dissolution citing Landis (1960) and Nye (1957). The uniqueness of each family in facing a crisis situation as well as the need for social support systems of many types are stressed. She never loses sight of the fact, however, that such services are patchwork remedies unless accompanied by educational programs designed to foster positive social attitudes toward the single parent and his/her family.

Burgess asserts that future research efforts should tackle questions related to "the marital role as it is related to emotional stability and to the ability of the single parent to function as a self-assured person. Furthermore, this role should be seen as "distinct from the problems related to parental roles, parent-child dynamics, child development, and socialization".

Equally thought-provoking, however, is the question of "how can scientific knowledge be used so that society will be responsive to the needs of the single parent and be willing to assist them toward leading a fuller life?" And while generally an excellent article, Burgess tends to describe rather than to analyze, avoiding the controversial domain of why society has certain attitudes in the first place--a question which must be grappled with as part of an effort designed to change the status quo.

P 10 Cannon, B. Michael and me. In J. Plack & J. Sawyer (Eds.), Men and masculinity. New Jersey: Prentice Hall, 1974.

Cannon, a 36-year-old black resident of Watts and nursery school director, talks of his life with this six-year-old son, Michael.

After his wife died in giving birth to Michael, Cannon decided to keep his child. Though challenged by his wife's mother, he won legal custody and temporarily went on welfare in order to take care of his infant son.

These all-too-brief pages demystify many aspects of the single father image (complete with live-in maids and exclusive boarding schools) fostered by the mass media. They provide an unglossed-over, natural, and therefore believable picture of one father-son shared existence.

E 3 Ferri, E. Characteristics of motherless families. The British Journal of Social Work, 1973, 3(1), 91-100.

The National Child Development Study in Britain is a "long-term investigation of the educational, social, and physical development of all children born in Britain in one week of 1958". As an offshoot of this study, it was determined that, of the original sample (about 16,000 children) 237 children (1.7% of the total) were motherless at age 11. Structured interviews with a parent (or other adult) in these motherless families were carried out by a health visitor in the homes of these children.

"Motherlessness" was defined as not living with the natural mother. Of these 237 children, only 2 out of 5 were actually living with their father where he functioned as the sole parent figure. One in three had stepmothers, and one in four lived in extended family situations.

Ferri found that the younger the children were, the less likely they were to be left with their father, whether the cause of motherlessness was marital breakdown or death. Each accounted for about half of the cases in this sample.

Younger fathers, perhaps not surprisingly, were more likely to remarry with fathers in the middle age range most likely to be parenting alone, that is, 55% of those 40-48 and 46% of those over fifty parenting alone as compared with only 27% of those under 40.

Finally, there was a positive relationship, though not statistically significant, between unemployment level and the degree to which the father was attempting to fulfill a dual role as breadwinner and homemaker.

In addition to reporting these initial results, Ferri raises important issues in critiquing past studies of motherless children. Correctly, she points out that such efforts "consist predominantly of investigations into the effects of maternal deprivation on very young, usually institutionalized children (Bowlby, 1966), and of retrospective inquiries into the home background of small samples of children or adolescents showing symptoms of delinquency or maladjustment."

Further research is being conducted with respect to the effects of motherlessness on various aspects of the child's development as it is occurring. Research concerned with single fathers, how they view their role, and how they handle various problems, is virtually nonexistent. Ferri correctly cites the need to study the "structural dynamics of broken families in general."

E 21 Gasser, R. D., & Taylor, C. M. Role adjustment of single parent fathers with dependent children. The Family Coordinator, 1976, 25, 397-401.

Forty single parent fathers, divorced or widowed and with at least one child under eighteen living with them, were given a questionnaire designed to assess the following aspects of single parenting: (1) the conflicts they faced in adjusting to their roles as parents; (2) the effect of death or divorce of spouse on their adjustment; and (3) "the effect of societal attitudes toward death or divorce in relation to the adjustment of the father". Subjects were asked to indicate the degree of their involvement prior to and during single parenting in six

activities considered necessary to the functioning of a household. They were also asked to indicate the degree of difficulty they experienced in carrying out these activities as a single parent. The six tasks were: meal preparation, dish washing, laundry, ironing, grocery shopping, and house cleaning.

It was found that "fathers who now had full (as opposed to partial) responsibility for these tasks comprised the largest percentage of every category except house cleaning". Prior to single parenting, with the exception of grocery shopping, over one-half of the fathers indicated they had little or no responsibility for these tasks. They seemed more familiar with household and child care responsibilities than fathers of the past, and "difficulties in management as a single parent appeared to stem more from the over-burdening of roles than from unfamiliarity with the tasks facing them."

Responses to additional questions revealed that the effect of role adjustment in meeting these needs, included posing new social problems in the areas of dating, business trips, and the pursuit of job possibilities for roughly half of the respondents. While divorced fathers were more likely to feel left out of social activities than widowers, they also "were more prone to consider themselves as well-adjusted and relatively free of problems".

Gasser and Taylor are correct in stating that most studies of the single parent family have been directed toward those headed by mothers, and that there has been a gradual shift in emphasis in research literature from concern with the "maladjustment" of children to the question of parental adjustment in these families. Their study, though limited, taps the latter area of concern, and as such uncovers valuable information. It fails, however, to even begin to get at the "multiplicity of variables, including such aspects as the ages of the children, the intimacy of family members prior to the marital breakdown, or the events causing the dissolution of the marriage", which they cite as affecting adjustment of both parents and children in the transition from two-parent to one-parent family.

While encouraging all disciplines in family development to accentuate the positive aspects of single parenthood, these "positive aspects" remain unclarified.

T 1 Glasser, P., & Navarre, E. Structural problems of the one-parent family. Journal of Social Issues, 1965, XXI, 98-109.

Glasser and Navarre focus on the problems faced by the large number of single-parent families classified as poor in the United States. Chilman and Sussman (1964) indicate that one-parent families are far more apt to be poor than other families. In fact, single parent families represent only one-twelfth of all families with children and more than one-fourth of those families are classed as poor.

With this focus in mind, and of primary interest to us here, is what they have to say about the single parent father. Not surprisingly, they elect to give greater attention to mother-child relationships than father-child relationships, since the overwhelming majority of single

parent families are headed by women. What is more surprising, given their emphasis on the poverty level status of many single parent families, they assume that, "if the remaining parent (happens to) be male, it is possible for him to continue to perform his major role as breadwinner and to hire a woman to keep house and, at least, to care for the children's physical needs". No data is presented to support this assertion.

Glasser and Navarre support the Parsonian view of the family, contending that "whatever the interests, values, and opinions of the remaining parent, the loss of a parent of one sex produces a structural distortion in the communications between the child and the adult world..." To remedy this, they suggest groups for women in this situation, efforts towards finding father substitutes for children, and subsidization of child care and house-keeping services for mothers who must work outside the home. The single parent father is, again, left out.

More fundamentally, Navarre and Glasser would prevent poverty and the problems of single parent family status through programs designed to keep the family together. "Increasing the number of stable and enduring marriages in the community so as to prevent the consequences of one parent family structure may be a first line of defense, and more closely related to treating the causes rather than the effects of poverty for a large number of people who are poor". To Navarre and Glasser, the single parent family is seen only as "deviant".

Needless to say, there is more than one bias operating in their analysis.

Ed 21 Jordan, V. L., & Little, W. F. Early comments on single-parent adoptive homes. Child Welfare, November 1966, 536-538.

The Los Angeles County Bureau of Adoptions began accepting single parents adoption applications in July 1965. This decision was based on a revision of the California State Department of Social Welfare Adoption Regulations which ended blanket prohibition of single parent adoptions with the subsection that reads: "Single parent applications may be accepted only when a two-parent family has not been found because of a child's special needs". For LA County, "special needs" meant "Negro children, Mexican children, and children of all races and nationalities with severe medical problems".

Favorable community reaction to these one-parent adoptions is reported. It is concluded that "experience with single parent adoptive placements has, to date, been very promising", however, the authors "remain firm in (their) belief that children both need and desire two parents and that everything possible should be done to obtain a good two-parent home for every child." It is interesting to note that though men had not been excluded from single parent adoptions, the first eight involved single women only. In like manner, their guidelines for use in single-applicant studies include emphasizing the importance of close family ties and the support of the extended family for the single adoptive parent. These opinions are offerred

and unfortunately are used in making decisions about child placement without supporting data. Comparative studies between two-parent and one-parent adoptive families have not been done, and we know very little about the role of the extended family in either of the two adoptive situations being discussed and judged.

P 21 Levine, J. A. Who will raise the children? New options for fathers (and mothers). New York: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1976.

Inspired by his experiences as a preschool teacher in Oakland, California, and by questions about men and child-care that those experiences generated, Levine narrowed his focus to fathers trying out alternative roles and came up with this "first-of-its-kind" book. Intended for a popular audience, Levine combines anecdotes from interviews with men all over the United States with discussion of research findings and of various socio-economic systems.

Though quick and easy reading, this book succeeds in raising both relevant and controversial issues with respect to social attitudes towards fathering and just what that role can and does encompass. Levine focuses on single parent fathers, including a discussion of custody questions and single parent adoption, and on alternatives to traditional roles for both men and women. This discussion includes sections on part-time employment, job-sharing, and househusbanding.

A few quotes to whet the potential reader's appetite: First, Levine writes of a "cultural lag" which he sees men as well as our whole society experiencing, "...our images and expectations of women are changing faster than those of men, and with little recognition that the roles of men and women in family life are interdependent. We are asking, 'How can women be accommodated to the marketplace?' when we should be asking, 'What sorts of changes have to made--can be made--to extend fuller options to both sexes, to encourage and support women in their work roles and men in their child-caring roles?'"

And secondly, as for men and child-caring, "...the serious encouragement of men to child-care responsibility means questioning our existing economic structure and the competitive, individualistic, achievement-oriented ethic that underlies it. It means placing our value primarily on the family, saying that it is society's job not just to create conditions in which individuals achieve and produce, but in which the internal, stable functioning of the family is promoted."

For a critique of Levine's book see the annotation for Breitbar above.

E 21 MacKay, A., Wilding, P., & George, V. Stereotypes of male and female roles and their influences on people's attitudes to one parent families. Sociological Review, 1972, 20(1), 79-92.

This study comes out of a larger research project on motherless families in Great Britain. It was designed to examine some of the values and attitudes which fathers said they had encountered in friends,

neighbors, and fellow workers, especially with respect to stereotypes of male and female roles.

A random sample from the electoral register covering three areas in Nottingham was taken in an attempt to ensure a sampling from each social class. Sixty-seven percent of those asked agreed to be interviewed, resulting in a sample of 359, only 16% of whom had any contact with single parent families. This type of contact proved to be largely of a superficial nature.

The importance of the male role in society as "producer" was stressed in the responses given to numerous questions. It was found that 78% of the sample thought that a father with children under school age should go to work. In the cases where school-aged children were involved this figure rose to 96%. For the single parent mother with under school-age children, 14% of the sample thought she should go to work, whereas 87% felt this way when the children were school-age. Forty-two percent of the latter stated that such work should only be part-time.

This emphasis on work, however, does not mean that people felt that a man should be refused supplementary benefits if he chose to remain home--89% approved of such benefits for fathers with children under school-age. Given the respondents' beliefs that it is necessary for fathers to do some work, the ideal solution seemed to lie in the direction of combining part-time work with supplementary wages, and, in fact, 88% approved of such a plan.

Though traditional expressive-instrumental biases about parental roles were expressed, it is interesting to note that about 2/3 of the respondents felt that either the mother or the father could provide for all the needs of the children if the financial situation was under control. More women than men thought that a lone parent could adequately provide for his/her children, and women were less likely than men to expect the single parent father to work. MacKay et al., suggest that this is due to women's ability to empathize with the single father in light of their own experience in performing the dual role of parent-worker.

Social class differences also proved interesting, if not somewhat surprising. The higher the social class of the respondent, the more likely he/she was to support the view that a father with children under school age should work. Furthermore, "the lower a respondent's class or school leaving age, the more likely he was to feel that a lone parent of either sex could provide adequately for the children". Similarly, 80% of the top two social classes included in the sample thought that lack of a mother's love and consequent emotional disturbance in the children was a problem in families headed by a single father and only 25% of the lower two classes held this view. (Note: the authors assessed 6 categories of classes in all). Here the authors hypothesize that the "popularized theories of Bowlby and Spock may have been more absorbed by the professional than the working classes."

In addition to establishing the importance of economic conditions

to the lifestyle of the motherless family, this article raises several issues to ponder. MacKay et al.'s discussion of values held by member of various social classes concerning acceptable lifestyle options available to the single parent father and the attitudes expressed towards him and his children are especially valuable. These dimensions have not been considered in other articles.

Note: The "larger research project" referred to herein is the subject of what appears to be a very valuable book on motherless families. Unfortunately the book came to our attention too late to do justice to in a full annotation. The reference book is: George, V., & Wilding, P. Motherless families. London & Boston: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1972.

E 21 Mendes, H. Single fathers. The Family Coordinator, 1976, 25, 439-444.

Thirty-two single fathers referred by an informal network of educators, physicians, social workers and the like were interviewed by the investigator for about three hours. A psychiatric social worker, Mendes proved "the respondent's attitudes, feelings, and conflicts about their experiences as a single parent". Most of the 32 had been single parents for two to three years; they ranged in age from 25 to 59, with most falling in the 30 to 44 year-old bracket. They were rearing from one to six children (mean 2.5), most of whom fell into the six to nine year-old age range. Slightly less than half of these families were middle class, the greater half were either working or lower class families.

Mendes emphasizes the fact that the role of the single father is not yet institutionalized in American culture. What this means is that "any man who attempts to perform that role must do so without role clarity". Cottrell (1942) asserted that "role clarity was the degree to which there was a set of explicit definitions of the reciprocal behaviors expected". With this lack of role clarity in mind, father adjustment with respect to the supervision and protection of children, homemaking, meeting the emotional needs of children, and rearing daughters in a motherless home were examined.

None of the fathers acknowledged any loss of feelings of masculinity because they had assumed homemaking tasks. Over half said they experienced stress in trying to coordinate all of the various tasks of caring for the home and the children. Some fathers were reluctant to ask for help from their respective extended families.

An exploratory study with unsophisticated methodology, Mendes nonetheless succeeds in raising several important practical considerations as a result of examining the content of her interviews with this fairly diverse group of single fathers. She cites the need not only for courses in the logistics of homemaking but also emphasizes the need to make available social services aimed at providing education in child development, services not necessarily geared to the single parent father but which are somehow made known to him through extensive outreach efforts.

Mendes states that her study reveals that the quality of the emotional relationships between fathers and their children is the area

most crucial to the welfare of the child. In addition to the practical suggestions cited above, further work with the theoretical notion of "role clarity" would ultimately aid the single father in fulfilling his "typical paternal role" and in turn enhance the quality of father-child interaction.

Mendes, H. Single fatherhood. Social Work, 1976, 21(4), 308-312.

Based on the data contained in an article which appeared in The Family Coordinator (1976), this article by Mendes concentrates on the theoretical distinction between single fathers who were "seekers" and those who were "assenters" with respect to attaining custody of their children. "Seekers were defined as those fathers who, on their own initiation, had actively wanted to become single parents. Assenters were those who had not actually sought single parenthood but had acceded to circumstances or to someone else's wishes." Sixteen men fell into each group.

Further broken down into the subgroups "aggressive seekers" and "conciliatory seekers", seekers in general tended to have strong positive sentiments about being parents, regarding parenthood as an important form of self-validation. All but four reported their wives to be inadequate as mothers and stated that they gave increasing priority to their children as their marriages deteriorated.

The assenters, too, were further classified into two subgroups: those who had single parenthood "aggressively" thrust on them, either by other people in the case of separation or divorce, or by the death of their spouse, and those who assumed their new role in "conciliatory" fashion. This latter group reported good relationships with their children and positive sentiments toward their wives. The former tended to derive "moderate to little personal satisfaction from the paternal role": the latter indicated an increase in positive feeling about their relationships with their children due to more interaction with them subsequent to becoming single fathers.

Mendes concludes that whether or not a father had chosen to be a single parent influences not only the father-child relationship, but also the ongoing adjustments to his new role. Thus, seekers tended to "seek out" needed services while assenters, who perhaps needed these services the most, were least likely to utilize available resources.

In addition to the practical suggestions cited from the article in The Family Coordinator, Mendes recommends that parental education groups with "a specific masculine orientation" be offerred. She sees existing groups as catering to the needs of women who usually far outnumber the men in these groups.

Mendes' distinction between seekers and assenters is a helpful tool on gaining a grasp of a complex situation. It is hard to disagree with the notion "that the parent-child relationship which has the best chance of succeeding is one in which the child was initially wanted". It must be kept in mind, however, that Mendes' determination of these two essentially qualitative entities was based solely on in-

terviewing fathers- ignoring the opinions of mothers, children, and others close to the family situation. As such, it is almost impossible to ascertain how working with fathers would affect the total system.

E 21 Murch, M. Motherless families project. The British Journal of Social Work, 1973, 3(3), 365-376.

This article is a report of work done with motherless families under the auspices of the Bristol Council of Social Services in England during a one year period, May 1971-June 1972. Two full-time caseworkers were hired with the intant of providing short-term intensive casework support "during the first weeks following the loss of the mother when the families was most likely to encounter serious practical problems, and being in a state of emotional shock, would be less able to overcome them unaided".

A pilot attempt with hopes of developing practical services, this study involved 30 families that were referred to this service through a variety of sources. Length of mother absence at the time of initial contact varied from one day to over one year.

The main concerns expressed by these fathers included: (a) how to find a housekeeper, 12/29; (b) how to get the wife to return, 9/29; (c) how to get help in looking after children, particularly in the day and during school holidays, 9/29; (d) financial worries, 4/49; and (3) worries about losing custody of the children, 4/29.

Nine of the 27 fathers who were employed prior to absence of their wives were forced to give up their jobs in order to care for their children. Fifteen of these fathers sought some kind of help from various social agencies, but very often the help offered was too limited or strictly qualified. Most practical help, therefore, came from relatives, friends, and neighbors, though all of these people clearly regarded this assistance as temporary, that is, helping out until the father could make more permanent arrangements elsewhere.

Murch postulates that a crisis pattern very similar to that of bereavement takes place for the father suddenly faced with single parenthood. Initial feelings of shock, followed by depression and then the activation of defense mechanisms such as anger eventually give way to a "more forward-looking attitude with the client seeking to find ways to adapt realistically to the loss", the final result being a "state of more normal equilibrium". Of these thirty cases reasons for motherlessness included 23 cases of desertion, 6 deaths, and 1 case of separation for other reasons.

This report is valuable in that it stresses the need for social services which offer not only crisis intervention counseling but also very practical aids, such as day care, to the single parent family. Its value is increased due to the fact that the analyses and suggestions are based on a year's work where individual cases were seen over a period of many weeks, as opposed to the single interview style of most other single father studies thus far published.

E 1 Nye, F. I. Child adjustment in broken and unhappy unbroken homes. Marriage and Family Living, 1957, 19, 356-361.

Anonymous questionnaires were distributed to 780 high school students, males and females in grades 9 through 12, in three Washington high schools. Based on evaluation of questionnaire responses, families were placed into one of three categories: broken, happy-unbroken, and unhappy-unbroken homes.

The data revealed that the social characteristics of the broken and unhappy-unbroken families were very similar. These measures included father's occupation level, child's aspiration level, family car value, number of schools attended, number of children in family, adolescent's age, mother's age, father's age.

In general, "adolescents in broken homes showed less psychosomatic illness, less delinquent behavior, and better adjustment to parents than did children in unhappy-unbroken homes." The data also point in the direction, contrary to public belief, that the adjustment of children in homes broken by divorce is no more difficult or unsuccessful than in other broken homes, for example those precipitated by death, separation, or desertion. For girls, differences favoring the broken home tended to be concentrated in the parent-child relationship, while for boys the larger differences in adjustment tended to be found in areas outside the home.

When interpreting the results of this study, it is advised that the reader be reminded of the nature of the sample; it is limited to adolescents in a single state, Washington, from a principly urban population. Generalizations to other age groups and other areas of the country should be made with caution.

It is difficult to judge the methodology soundness of this study without seeing the questionnaire that was used. No validity or reliability information is provided for any instruments. The experimenter defines the criteria of "unhappy" family based on the amount of parental quarreling, arguing, domination, lack of mutual activities and interests, and an evaluation of happiness made by the child. This type of data implies some interaction with the parents or should imply interviews with the parents. There is no mention of this in the article. If indeed it did not occur, it seems unjustifiable to draw conclusions about family interaction and parental adjustment from the reports of only the child in the family.

This study is important in that it presents a new way of looking at adjustment in broken and unbroken families. It requires psychologists and sociologists to start looking at healthy family functioning in terms of quality of interaction rather than merely in terms of number

of parents present

E 21 Orthner, D. K., Brown, T., & Ferguson, D. Single-parent fatherhood: An emerging life style. The Family Coordinator, 1976, 25, 429-437.

There are nearly half a million single parent families in the United States headed by fathers. These families contain approximately 10% of the 4.5 million children under 18 who reside in single parent families.

Men receive custody of minor children for one of three reasons; death of spouse, court designated custody, or adoption. At present, the most significant factor contributing to the rise in the percentage of single parent households headed by males (estimated to reach 13% by 1972) is court designated custody.

Changes in custody policy are attributed to fathers asserting their right to custody of their children, no-fault divorce laws, and women desiring to seek new roles outside the home.

Against this background, "lengthy, semi-structured interviews were conducted with 20 single parent fathers from the Greensboro, North Carolina area". The men ranged in age from 25 to 64 with an average age of 37, 10 had children between 18 months and 5 years old and 10 had children between 6 and 17 years old. Nine had one child, 9 others had 2 children, and two had 3 children. There were 3 widowers, 15 divorced or separated men, and 2 never-married men. The average social status of these men, based on education and income was above the norm. Even so, the majority of the 15 divorced or separated received custody "because their wives did not want or were unable to care for their children."

Almost all reported an active social life, with only half considering marriage in their future plans. Sex was reported to be an area that generated a fair amount of concern, especially the issue of cohabitation and its possible effects on the children. While most thought that a stable two-parent relationship is best for the child, they felt that they were quite successful in rearing their children, and reported good parent-child rapport. They regretted not being able to spend more time at home.

As far as social services, or lack thereof, 88% said that child care problems had not interferred with their work. Half of the men interviewed attended meetings of some singles-oriented group which was found by some to be therapeutic and emotionally supportive. Three-quarters of the men had no outside help with housework, and one-third received some form of public assistance, though this was rarely tied to the fact they were single parents. In some instances, proof of financial independence is required if one is to be awarded and allowed to maintain custody of the children. In addition, parents of these single fathers were found to be generally supportive, providing emotional assurance, child care, financial, and housekeeping assistance.

The authors conclude that these fathers, in addition to feeling quite capable and successful in their role as primary parent, also "appear to be taking advantage of the trend toward allowing men to be more nurturing". This, they say, hopefully lays Parson and Bales

(1955) notion of the instrumental role to rest. These authors also found no preponderance of "mother substitutes" (Biller & Meredith, 1975).

They recommend the following social support for the single parent father: (1) day care facilities that extend services into the evenings; (2) child care facilities in shopping centers; (3) organizing babysitting cooperatives; (4) transportation of children to and from day care centers; (5) classes on single parenthood; and (6) "Big Sister" programs.

P 21 Peer, E. Bachelor fathers. Cosmopolitan, July 1974, pp. 108-110.

Written with a "pop" audience in mind, Peer's portrayal of the lives of single parent fathers suffers from her blend of seriousness and sarcasm.

Basically supportive of the trend in American society for both men and women to question traditional roles, she confronts those in the professional world who would deny a nurturant capacity in males. "Yet even as psychiatrists continue to view male custody of the children as an aberration, the statistics keep growing. But then, human behavior, of course, has always been one giant step ahead of its analysts."

The positive nature of this basic position, however, is sometimes undermined by Peer's flippant tone in her descriptions of representative single parent fathers and their lifestyles. Falling into a sort of new "jet set" category, these men are plagued by Danish housekeepers who aren't ready to tackle American supermarkets, and burdened with finding an additional apartment to rent in order to insure a private sex life. In short, they fail to come alive for the reader as real people, their day-to-day existence remains trapped in a fantasy world of spacious apartments and massage parlours, a world far removed from the lives of the average person, let alone single parents.

The best to be hoped for is that comments to the effect that so-and-so "served nearly three years of bachelor fatherhood" before remarrying will be taken with a grain of salt. Hopefully the words of one man, "bachelor fatherhood makes you more tolerant, gentler. I didn't feel less masculine, but I felt needed in a way I never experienced when my first wife was around. I'm still much less driven in my work because the kids introduced a whole new dimension into my life", will be taken to heart.

P 21 Weigand, J. The single father. M.S., January 1973, pp. 29-31.

"The Single Father" is an easy-reading, fairly light account of Weigand's experiences as a single parent father. Though limited to his personal experiences, that of a free-lance writer with income enough to hire a maid to take care of his two children and household tasks, his observations are often inciteful and relevant to the concerns of a fairly wide audience.

Though Weigand's style is basically non-confrontational, several ideas come through loud and clear: there is more to a woman's life than raising children and more to a man's than bringing home a paycheck; men can and do nurture; many of his problems as a single parent father are due to society's failure, including immediate friends and

family, to see him as anything but deviant from the norm and in a situation remedied only by remarriage; and, finally, his "love affair" with his children, with all the strains and uncertainties it has brought with it, has made him "different and richer" and "more reflective and questioning".

In the end, "The Single Father" becomes an argument for parenthood based on "warmth, affection, openness, and respect for persons." Though Weigand concludes that parenting is "much too important to be left to either fathers or mothers alone", the essence of his article is that, given certain social support systems as well as consistent insight into the individual needs of all of its members, the single parent family "succeeds". Attitudinal changes on both the individual and social levels would contribute much to increasing the likelihood of this "success".

T 24 Sprey, J. The study of single parenthood: Some methodological considerations. In B. Schlessinger (Ed.), The one-parent family. Canada: University of Toronto Press, 1970.

The intent of this article is to evaluate the validity of the concept of the single parent family and to generate some ideas as to how this phenomenon can best be studied.

The author looks at the single parent family as part of an ongoing family process. The universals of the single parent structure as defined as (a) the absence of one parent and (b) the stigma often attached to this structure. The process of adapting to single parenthood reflects a qualitative change in family life resulting from a crisis event. An event in the family process is seen as having "caused" single parenthood which then functions as a causal factor in its own right. In view of this, Sprey states that single parenthood should be looked at as a dependent variable in the former case and as an independent variable in the latter.

The study of single parenthood as a dependent variable focuses on the nature of the consequences of the significant event. As illustrated by others, these crisis-provoking events include death of spouse, divorce, separation, and unwed parenthood. Sprey interprets the focus as trying to answer the question: To what extent can the nature of the family breakup explain the behavior of the family members in resulting single parent family units?

When viewing the single parent phenomenon as an independent variable the research question becomes the effect of single parenthood on family process and functioning. Other important social and economic variables must be considered when trying to determine the extent to which the functioning potential of the family has been impaired. Comparisons between intact nuclear families and single parent families become meaningful. Careful designs should include single parent families of different types matched with a sample of intact control families. The consequences of single parenthood can be greatly influenced by other conditional factors such as availability of funds, family and community resources. These factors cannot be ignored.

In his final comments, Sprey suggests that "the causal explanation of single parenthood should combine the study of the nature of the crisis-provoking event with that of the specific conditional characteristics of the families under consideration". Utilizing Sprey's dependent-independent variable scheme and viewing single parent family as an ongoing process allows one to look at both the precipitating crisis event and examine subsequent behavior.

Though lacking in specific suggestions for future designs, Sprey's observations raise important methodological considerations. This article is a step in the right direction towards studying the phenomonon of single parenthood with increased scientific rigor.

Ed 1 Schlesinger, B. The one-parent family in perspective. In B. Schelsinger (Ed.), The one-parent family. Canada: University of Toronto Press, 1970.

This brief article introduces the concept of the one-parent family. Statistics quoted from the 1960 census effectively illustrate the pervasiveness of the single-parent family phenomenon in both the United States and Canada, 12.5 percent and 8.5 percent, respectively. Schlesinger notes that single-parent families are most commonly defined as a sort of deficit structure, a definition reflective of the social bias which links the "normal" family with the "nuclear" family.

Single-parent families can be classified according to the manner in which their particular situation arose: (1) death of the spouse, (2) divorce, (3) separation, and (4) birth of a child outside of marriage. Schlesinger believes that this ordering parallels the degree of acceptance of these types of families by society at large. A brief discussion of the difficulties faced by both adults and children affected by each of the four events is included with anecdotal accounts.

The article concludes with an emphasis upon providing social services and support agencies to meet the needs of all members of single-parent families. University people need to become aware of the unique problems of the single-parent family. to teach others to meet these needs, and to help members of single-parent families "re-enter the normal stream of life".

Schlesinger's article is an interesting introduction to the single-parent family, however, it is surprisingly lacking in several areas. Empirical data is not cited; and though he makes a plea for more research in this area, he posits no hypotheses, no designs for further research efforts. No suggestions are included as to the types of services single-parent families might need nor any suggestions made for the means by which such services could be provided. On the other hand, his effort to present an unbiased, factual account of single-parent families without making any value judgments was appreciated.

E 17 Aberle, D. F., & Naegele, K. D. Middle-class fathers' occupational role and attitudes toward children. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1952, 22, 366-378.

The focus of this article is on the relationship between the adult role of the father and his orientation to his children. The authors' assumption is that childrearing is future oriented. The father has a picture of the desired end product which is influenced by his adult experiences in the working world and his own childhood experiences. The authors reflect that with major social changes in the United States changes in socialization patterns can be predicted.

The data presented is from home interviews with fathers in twenty families which was gathered from two visits. The subjects were middle class college-educated professionals whose wives were mostly college educated too. (The wives were also interviewed, but that data was not presented in this article.) This study was exploratory in nature with the main goal being to see if there was a connection between the satisfactions and strains of each father's occupational setting and his behavior toward his wife and children. The children of the fathers interviewed were all of preschool age.

When asked directly, fathers could see no connection between their attitudes and behaviors on the job and their behavior at home. However, these fathers did have definite career-oriented expectations of their preschool sons. They mentioned wanting their sons to take initiative, display responsibility, be aggressive, go to college, and take a middle class job. They did not consider skilled wagework or jobs in academia to be acceptable. Their goals for their daughters were less well defined. They wanted them to be pretty, sweet, and nice, and worried if they were too "bossy". College was not seen as important, but daughters could choose that if they so desired. All fathers preferred marriage for their daughters over a career. When discussing behaviors that disturbed them in their children, the fathers tended to mention minor insignificant problems and overlook major "symptoms" identified by the researchers.

The first criticism of this article is the manner in which the data was presented. It was all in summary fashion with no analysis. It was hard to decide what was the researchers' interpretation of fathers' statements and what was actually data. Of course this is partially explained by the manner in which the study was done and also by the relatively early date when emphasis on scientific rigor was not so great. It would be helpful to have information from fathers in other social classes during this time period to compare to the opinions of these middle class fathers.

E Baumrind, D., & Black, A. E. Socialization practices associated with dimensions of competence in preschool boys and girls. Child Development, 1967, 38, 291-327.

Sample: 110 families with preschool children at the Berkeley Child Study Center.

Measures: Parent Attitude and Child Behavior Interview and an

observational HVSA (Home Visit Sequence Analysis).

Data Analysis: Cluster Analytic Technique, which related child behaviors identified separately for boys and girls to behavioral measures observed in the home, to parental attitudes in mother-son, father-daughter, father-son, and mother-daughter relationships.

Results: Specific parent-child relationships varied with sex of parent and child. Statistically significant (.05) relationships were as follows:

1) Warmth was not an important predictor of child behavior in this study except in relation to autonomy in boys.

2) Punitive attitudes were not associated with fearful or compliant behavior, but for girls, with independent and domineering behavior, and for boys with unlikeable behavior.

3) Paternal consistent discipline was associated with independence and assertiveness in boys and with affiliativeness in girls.

4) The cluster, maternal maturity demands, was correlated with independence and assertiveness for boys.

5) Parent's willingness to offer justification for directives and to listen to the child were associated with competent behavior on the part of the child.

6) Restrictiveness and refusal to grant independence were associated in boys with dependent, passive behavior.

Conclusions: Warm, firm, demanding parent behaviors produced independent, assertive behavior in boys and girls.

A poorly written and organized study with complex methodology which, judging from the discussion, the researcher didn't understand very well. Very difficult to assess its validity. The intent to analyze according to father-son, etc., variables did not materialize and potentially informative data got buried in words.

E,C 22 Berger, B. M., Hackett, B. M., & Millar, R. M. Childrearing in communes. In L. K. Howe (Ed.), The future of the family. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1972. Pp. 159-169.

The information given in this article is based on data being collected from fourteen communes in norther California. At the time this article was written, the study was in its second year. Infants are still primarily the responsibility of the mother. Child care of two- to four-year-old children is usually shared by the group of mothers having children in this age group. Children older than four years are treated much like other members of the extended family in the commune. They are considered responsible for their own behavior and their parents are not blamed if their behavior is inappropriate.

Young children usually receive a lot of fathering. Fathers hold, cuddle, and feed their babies. However, the extent of this behavior depends on the individual father. There are no strong norms apparent which require the attentiveness of fathers. Indeed, while all children are viewed as intrinsically worthy of love and respect, this does not mean attention. Therefore, the children are rarely seen as the focus of either parent's life.

While one might expect more fathering to be apparent in communes than in the general population because of the supposed breakdown of stereotyped sex roles in the commune, this does not seem to be the case. Indeed, one observes in almost all populations of fathers studied a great deal of variability in activities performed and time spent with their children. One would hope that the authors are collecting more information on fathering in communes than is apparent in this article. It is important to know how the fathers in communes view their role.

T 15 Biller, H. B. The invisible American father. Sexual Behavior, 1972, 2, 16-22.

Biller discusses the dangers of both the psychological and physically absent father. He states that the father is essential to the psychological mental health and the development of traditional masculine-feminine traits. The father is the "chief dealer with institutions outside the family", therefore, influencing the social and intellectual development of his children. Father absence is the pinpointed as the cause of psychopathology (homosexuality) in paternally deprived homes. Ideally, Biller would like to see both parents actively involved in childrearing. Fathers need to spend quality time with their children. Media needs to convey "father power" to families who do not know the critical influence father presence has on child development. Suggestions like: increasing male elementary and preschool teachers, promoting programs like "Big Brothers", inviting retired men to supervise play grounds and assist in classrooms. All made to promote the development of proper masculine and feminine traits.

This journal includes responses to the articles within it. One by Robert R. Bell refutes many of Biller's contentions. Bell sees society changing, and with it the need to throw away traditional instruments that polarize masculine and feminine behavior (attitudes), instead, to look at and measure attributes which are positive "people" qualities. Bell sees parenting as the socialization process of children, which could be filled by many different people. "Father power" is viewed as a ridiculous concept, reinforcing game playing. "Fathers" however are important for a wide variety of reasons to families.

Biller's research base is his own work which looks at some skewed populations (i.e. economically deprived father absent families). Biller suggests a need for fathers to participate more in families, but neglects the personal satisfaction fathers get, and the increased freedom for the wife-mother. His suggestions for change are useful and necessary. Others he might have included are: job sharing, paternity leaves, school education by fathers and mother about parenting and early experiences with young children.

E,T 8 Biller, H. B., & Borstelmann, L. J. Masculine development: An integrated review. Merrill Palmer Quarterly, 1967, 13, 253-294.

A very extensive, well-organized and written review of the literature which focuses on the psychological factors of masculine development as they relate to parent-child relationships. Research study summaries

and suggestions for further conceptual and empirical clarification are found in the following categories:

A. General Aspects of Masculine Development
   1. Constitutional factors
   2. Cultural expectations
   3. Theories of masculine development
   4. Aspects of sex role development and functioning
   5. Measurement of masculinity

B. Father-Son Relationship
   1. Father's availability
   2. Father's masculinity
   3. Father's nurturance
   4. Father's punitiveness and limit setting
   5. Father power

C. Mother-Son Relationship
   1. Matriarchal homes and maternal overprotection

This review views masculine development from a multi-aspect vantage point, a real strength in conceptualization. Particular emphasis is given to father-son relationships which is unusual in the literature, and as a result, served as an excellent starting point for investigating the subject of paternal nurturance in a father-son relationship.

Ed,P
5,2,7
8,9,10
11,12,13
14,15,16
17,18,20
21

Biller, H., & Meredith, D. Father power. Garden City, NY: Anchor Press, Doubleday, 1975.

"Father power must stem more from the perception of the profound personal impact of fatherhood, rather than the impact of the father's wallet."

Biller and Meredith go on to discuss the father and child development by addressing the following topics--masculinity, femininity, self-confidence, achievement, nurturance, morals, discipline, social and sexual relationships, physical growth, body pride, intelligence, competence, school education, work, and child's career choice.

Father Power is a provocative and powerful book. It is well written and enjoyable reading, but sex stereotypes are prevalent throughout. For example, "your wife may see your child's teacher as a cohort and be less willing to assert herself in calling for change in the school system". In regard to the father and homework, "because you are usually the most technically educated parent, the child may question you more often about homework". Generalizations are also too narrow, such as, "school seldom offers a child practical benefits arising from his learning".

Biller and Meredith's reference to women is a very traditional and conservative one. It seems the readers of this book might be men who have shared in a women's liberating experiences and as such the failure to recognize women's liberation as naive.

In spite of the above criticisms, this book is a highly recommended reading. It's content on father power is well documented. References are listed by chapter in the back of the book. It's approach to fathering is more than positive and the book gives suggestions for putting theory into practice.

E Block, J. Personality characteristics associated with fathers' attitudes towards child-rearing. Child Development, 1955, 26, 41-48.

Sample: 100 military officers, identified as restrictive or permissive in their child-rearing practices on the Luft and Block Child-Rearing Attitude Scale.

Measures: Personality characteristics were identified through procedures ranging from charades through stress interviews to standardized psycho-dramatic situations with eight staff psychologists viewing the subjects through the procedures and evaluating each subject by means of the Q Sort method of description.

Data Analysis: 122 of 498 scores were correlated with the Child-Rearing Attitude scores at or beyond the .05 level of significance.

Results: Personality characteristics of men expressing restrictive attitudes are more submissive, suggestible, conforming, indecisive, ineffectual and over-controlled, a prototype of the "authoritarian personality".

Personality characteristics of men expressing permissive attitudes are more self-reliant, ascendant, rebellious toward authority figures, persuasive, counteractive, and sarcastic, representing a more optimal level of personality integration.

Conclusions: The author related father personality characteristics to the description of ethnocentric adolescents in another study. He hypothesized that it is this adolescent personality type that becomes a restrictive father which sets up a cycle of personality transmission from father to son that is self-perpetuating but self-defeating.

The study had a self-selected, captive population, with no control group which would not show a total range of child-rearing attitudes and personality types. The study provides an example of a comprehensive and innovative personality assessment procedure. Actual data was not reported in this article. For clinical validity, the procedure would need to be used on other populations.

E,T 7 Bronfenbrenner, U. Some familial antecedents of responsibility and leadership in adolescents. In L. Petrully & B. M. Bass (Eds.), Leadership and interpersonal behavior. New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1961. Pp. 239-272.

Sample: 400 tenth grade students in upstate New York, four socio-economic levels as reflected by father's educational level.

Measures: Rated leadership and responsibility of adolescents as seen by teachers. Family relations measured by 20 variables of parent behavior derived from adolescent's description from a 100-item checklist.

Data Analysis: Used multi-variate analysis with no predictions specified in advance.

Results: Father and son relationships--Mother is seen as the most important source of power, general discipline, demands for achievement and rejection. In two instances father surpasses mother, only with boys.

1. As agent of physical punishment
2. Time spent in activities involving skill or competition.

Social class differences--Irrespective of sex, parents with less education spend less time with their children and are rated as relatively more rejecting, punitive, indulgent, and overprotective by their adolescent children. With rise in educational level, fathers, although more often away from home, are more likely to participate in projects and activities with their children.

Conclusions:

1. It is only the better educated families that the father in any way approaches or surpasses the mother as a generally influential person in the child's life.
2. It is the presence of rejection by fathers rather than the lack of a high degree of warmth which is inimical to the development of responsibility in adolescent boys. It is the lack of discipline by the father which is associated with low responsibility in boys but there is a critical point beyond which too much authority impedes rather than facilitates the development of responsibility in males.
3. Affiliative companionship, nurturance, principled discipline, affection, and affective reward, particularly from father fosters leadership in sons.

An exemplary exploratory study dealing with middle range theory development. Independent variable-prent practices, Dependent variable-adolescent responsibility and leadership, Intervening and/or mediating variables-sex of parent, sex of child, and family's social position.

Weaknesses arise from adolescent report of parental behavior and teacher's ratings, and interpretations by the author. The study was intended to raise questions and create hypotheses, not confirm them, which it did. Provides a good discussion of explanations for differences in socialization of males and females in our society and is based on the assumption that the present definition of masculinity is OK.

T 25 Bronfenbrenner, U. Who cares for America's children? In L. K. Howe (Ed.), The future of the family. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1972. Pp. 139-150.

Bronfenbrenner challenges the statement that our culture is "child-centered". Instead he feels that child-rearing is given very low priority in the United States and as a result, those who raise children have a low status. Ultimately, childrearing will have to hook into our economy in a different way both to raise the status of child-rearers and to provide parents better access to their children during the day. Bronfenbrenner emphasizes that children in our country are too isolated from the real world. They have little contact in their early years with adults other than their parents. All ages of children are depending more and more on their peers for interaction.

Bronfenbrenner lists eight possible solutions for this situation:

(1) Expose school-age children to real work situations where they can observe and ask questions.

(2) Encourage business and industry to build child care centers

on their premises so parents can visit at coffee break and lunch time.

(3) Every moderately sized business should create a "Commission on Children" to investigate the effects business policies and practices have on the family and children.

(4) Provide more half-time and part-time employment with the same status and benefits as full-time.

(5) Revise television programming so that viewers are not merely passive recipients but entire family can participate in games, conversations, etc.

(6) Provide more community and society support for the family.

(7) Parents should be actively involved in planning and administrating day care centers. Day care activities

E Clavan, S., & Robak, N. Masculinity-fathers and sons. Youth and Society, 1974, 6(1), 32-48.

The purpose of the study was to determine whether, in fact, men perceive masculinity in new ways.

Sample and Measures: Questionnaire administered to 89 undergraduates from five colleges in one metropolitan city and to their fathers.

Data Analysis: Factor analysis was performed first to determine face validity of instrument. The mean score was then calculated for each index and t-tests were performed to determine statistical significance of intergenerational or intragenerational change.

Results: (1) Statistically significant evidence of differences between generations in all categories were found. (2) A trend away from a double standard in sex relations in conjunction with (3) A "parenting effect", on fathers' present feelings about premarital sex. (4) Growing acceptance of working wives/mothers supported further by (5) A trend toward sharing household tasks, and (6) A significant intragenerational change in fathers' views of working wives.

Conclusions: Still a generation gap between sons and fathers of after marriage responsibilities. Some evidence for the theoretical position that when female's roles change, so will male's in that the data support a supposition that men are beginning to accept some rearrangement of behavior patterns traditionally labeled male and female.

A limited sample from which generalization is shaky. The study was small in scope but methodologically sound. It criticizes previous role studies in which stereotypic normative male and female characteristics are assumed, a real first on that basis.

Ed,E 5,6,12 13,14,16 Daluge, D. B. Attitudes of high school seniors towards children and child rearing. Master of Science Home Economics Education, University of Wisconsin-Madison, 1975.

Using 223 boys and girls from eight Wisconsin high schools,

Daluge developed an attitude inventory about children and child rearing. For analysis, attitude items were grouped into five areas: role of the child in the home, acceptance of the child, possessiveness toward the child, control of the child, and empathy toward a child's problems.

Students who had working mothers felt that the home should be more child centered than those who did not have working mothers. Students from one parent families with mothers working (sample of 15) felt the home should be more child centered than students from two parent families where mother worked.

Girls were more acceptant of the child, less possessive toward the child and more empathetic toward a child's problems than boys.

Students who had child development courses were more acceptant of the child, less possessive of the child, and more empathetic toward a child's problems.

The smaller the community in which the students lived, the more control students felt should be exerted on the child. This more traditional approach to child rearing was thought to reflect attitudes prevalent in the respective communities. There was no sex difference in attitudes about control of the child.

There was no significance at the .05 level of students attitudes toward children and child rearing for the variables--ordinal position in the family, number of siblings, work experience of the respondent and whether or not the father worked.

P Dodson, F. How to father. New York: The New American Library, Inc., 1975.

Parents need to learn how to rear children. This book views development from the fathers point of view, following the child through birth to the age of 21, with cartoons to help ellucidate important points. Subjects covered include: how to stimulate the child intellectually, methods of successful discipline, how to give your child a good sex education at home, dealing with the drug threat, good books to read, helping your adolescent choose his career. One of the most useful parts of the book is the extensive appendixes. They include toys to make, games, books and records which are age graded for children. Dodson follows a theme of empathy in this presentation. He hopes an understanding of children's expected behavior will help ward off ineffectual attempts at intervention. It would be a useful book for a parent to have on his bookshelf.

P English, O. S., & Foster, C. J. A guide to successful fatherhood. Chicago: Science Research Associates, Inc., 1954.

English and Foster have attempted to write a short "how to" booklet, on fathering. The book discusses the importance of father in the development of sex role differentiation, child discipline support of mother and briefly touches on the developmental needs of children. The authors believe that fathers must now "plan consciously to be with their children". At the end of the booklet are two short quizes. One for fathers and one for mothers. Questions follow the format of the book and try to identify strong and weak areas in parenting. Both quizes follow traditional male-female role assumptions.

Allusions to Freudian theory are made throughout this booklet. Fathers need to be accepting and realize the importance of toilet training, but modeling is never mentioned. An assumption that the acquisition of knowledge will influence the fathers basic pattern of parenting is made. This assumption is contrary to what all educators know. It takes experiences with behavior, attitudinal evaluation, as well as basic knowledge of child development to change. Several pages are used to discuss discipline. Consequent parental behaviors are delt with but the antecedent behaviors are neglected (child proofing homes). Another point questioned is, the fathers first role is that of a good husband. Today it seems that many single parent families are proving role separation can be successful (father/husband). Androgeny is an unviable concept to these authors. Boys are masculine and girls are feminine and ne're the twain shall meet. New literature for prospective fathers needs to be produced.

T,P 23 Farrell, W. The liberated man. New York: Bantam, 1975.

This book is a result of scientific study undertaken by the author via a questionnaire for men, his own personal liberation, his involvement in male consciousness raising groups, and his work with those involved in the women's liberation movement. He starts off by outlining a new "human" vocabularly to take the place of our old pronouns like he, she, his, hers, etc.

Farrell explores the connection between women's liberation and the male mystique, noting the "this is the only revolution in which the so-called oppressed is allegedly in love and sharing the children of the oppossor" (p. 5). The close proximity of men and women results in either growth for both or pitched battle. The entire book is devoted to promoting growth and perhaps will serve to defuse the anger of some recently liberated women.

An especially relevant chapter is devoted to the family and redefining the roles of the mother and father. The author makes the important distinction between a father who is with the family participating physically, and the one who is communicating on an open, warm, human level. Fathers can offer their sons a new masculine model stronger than the old one because the father cares enough to be there offering a model at all. Also, the father's concern for his family gives it a new increased value.

This is another one of the consciousness raising books that is vital on the public level. Not only does Farrell cover all important aspects of being a man in our society, but he offers sound logical alternatives for the man interested in change. He does not indicate that change is easy but rather that it is very hard. He advocates men's consciousness raising groups to provide the peer support that is vital in an effort such as this one. One hopes that this book will be read and reread by all men contemplating fatherhood. If even some of its ideas were applied to fathering during the preschool period, the result would be a future generation of warmer, more humane people.

P Fasteau, M. F. The male machine. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1974.

This young lawyer speaks of the frustrations the masculine role has placed him in. He seeks to express his disatisfactions through a readable book. One chapter focuses particularly on families and fatherhood. He challenges basic assumptions like: the only worthwhile career is an all consuming one, the social side on an executive job requires the full participation of the spouse, the wife is the only one who can adequately care for the children, etc. He sees the rewards of child care as being very personally real, but not traditionally valued by the male. Most fathers want to be close to their children, but have never learned how. This book questions and searches for some viable alternatives.

The Male Machine is almost entirely opinion gathered from observations, personal frustrations, although some fathering research is noted. Androgeny is the ideal, and will only be reached with a total change in attitudes and basic assumptions. Fasteau wants to be more human with all the costs and benefits. This book attacks the problem and the goal. The process is much more vague. This is more evidence from an articulate person that the existing system of roles is inhuman and a change is due.

T Forrest, T. The paternal roots of male character development. The Psychoanalytic Review, 1967, 54(2), 81-99.

A general discussion as to how the father influences the development of male child personalities from infancy. Very psychoanalytic in theoretical position with the basic assumption being that the male is an instrumental leader and all development should be geared toward that end goal.

The father's specific contributions lie primarily in four areas:

(1) As a stabilizer of the mother;

(2) A balancer of the mother-child relationship by loosening or tempering the bond;

(3) Assisting the male child in relating to the objective world;

(4) Exposing the child to contrasting modes of parent-child interaction, the mother's gentle, soothing, tender, protective ways versus the strength, tension, challenges, and mild anxiety that is thrilling of the father.

This presentation makes males and females very uni-dimensional and ascribes to them the very traditional sexist roles as mothers and fathers. It essentially eliminates the possibility of males being nurturant as a viable option.

P 5,7,21 23 Francke, L. B. Putting father back in the family. Newsweek, (September 22) 1975, 54.

The problem of raising children are endemic to the situation regardless of gender. Men are joining women in the search for a way to pursue a career and raise a family at the same time. Men are singing a phrase traditionally sung by women, "He can have either his work or

his children, but not both." "The system requires that a man must choose."

1974 statistics indicated 980,000 children under 18 are living with their fathers, a 10% increase over 1970. Adoption agencies are beginning to give children to single men. Schools are granting child care leaves to male teachers. Divorce courts are awarding more children to their fathers. There is a "new consciousness that fathers must be just as suited for child care as mothers".

Quotes in the article indicate becoming a sole parent can be devastating. One father said, "I became bitchy, resentful, unkempt and shrill". "He encountered a society that does not cater to fatherhood". "Men's rest rooms don't have a shelf for changing diapers like women's do". One the positive, "children break down the male facade" and "you discover a capacity for intimacy and emotion".

This article is anecdotal which may help fathers who are seeking a more active role in child care to know their feelings are more universal, but it does not go beyond this. Figures and trends are sited without references to where documentation can be found.

P, 4,5,6,7 8,9,10,11 12,14,16 20,21,23 Gilbert, S. D. What's a father for? New York: Warner Books, Inc., 1975.

The content of the book deals with fatherhood by choice, changing male-female roles, fathering from birth on, fathering teenagers and single fathers. The emphasis is on problems rather than the rewards of fatherhood.

Generalizations are too frequent (such as, "It's not just your kids who drive their father crazy--all kids do it". References are made to research which strengthens the credability of the book. Little emphasis is placed on specific behaviors to use. It is written at an easy reading level.

At the back of the book is a bibliography, list of organizations with further information, and a list of books for fathers, child development, marriage, single parenthood, sex education, and drugs.

Ed,P 2,4,5 12,13,14 23 Gordon, S., & Wollin, M. M. Parenting a guide for young people. New York/Chicago/Los Angeles: Oxford Book Company, 1975.

Written for high school students, this book is a valuable resource in parenthood education. The 177 page paperback book discusses human reproduction, pregnancy, and delivery. The most of the book deals with the opportunity for rewarding experiences in parenting a child during his first, second, and preschool years. The book contains practical information on care, physical, mental, and emotional development, sex education for the child, and a brief discussion of career opportunities in family and child care. A two-page list of suggested source books for child development is included.

The book is free of sex stereotypes in its' orientation. It is written in an interesting manner, the authors think with the reader. The content appears entirely valid.

Ed 10,11,14 22

Grando, R., & Ginsberg, B. Communication in the father-son relationship: The parent-adolescent relationship development program. The Family Coordinator, 1976, 25, 465-473.

The Parent-Adolescent Relationship Development Program (PARD) teaches communication skills intended to improve communication and relationship problems and be preventive in the sense they would forestall development of difficult problems.

Listener and speaker roles were practiced discussing issues participants identified as relationship issues in which they would like to communicate better.

The sample was self-selective in that participants chose to participate in a program focused on improving communication and relationship. Participants were white, middle-class, most fathers had completed college, average age of father was 42 with a range of 35-55, sons average age was 13 with a range of 11-16.

Father and son participants had significantly higher communication and relationship scores on both behavioral and questionnaire measures as compared to their scores before the program and as compared to a control group.

In viewing the family as a system, we must ask what the effect of a father-son communication program would be on the father-mother relationship and on the mother-son relationship?

E,C 11

Greenberg, M., & Morris, N. Engrossment: The newborn's impact upon the father. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1974, 44, 520-531.

This article is an example of clinical research undertaken as a result of clinical observations of fathering behavior and research on mother-infant interaction. It represents an attempt to elucidate the characteristics of a phenomena the authors term engrossment: "a sense of absorption, pre-occupation, and interest in the infant" (p. 521). The authors consider all fathers to have an innate potential for engrossment, which is released by contact with the infant early in life. This is similar to attachment as described by Bowlby and others.

Data collection was done on two groups of normal fathers of normal infants, fifteen in each group. One group had their first contact with their infant at birth in the delivery room and the other had their first contact after the birth when the infant was shown to them by the nursery staff. Each group was given a questionnaire to complete dealing with their feelings toward the newborn 48-72 hours after the child's birth. In addition, approximately half of the fathers in each group were interviewed in an open-ended session after completing the questionnaire. There were no significant differences in feelings between the two groups of fathers. However, the trend of the results suggested that fathers present at birth thought they could distinguish their babies from other babies better than fathers not present, were more comfortable holding their babies, and several commented that "when you see your child born, you know it's yours" (p. 527). Both groups rated their paternal feelings as average to very high (97%),

were very glad immediately after the birth (85%), and on the day of data collection (97%). In addition, many of the fathers who were interviewed indicated that they had not felt very involved in the pregnancy prior to their child's birth and were quite surprised at their feelings of attraction to the baby.

P,Ed
4,22,23

Harrison, N. The adolescent father: Coming of age. McCalls, April 1974, 1(7), 40.

A rap session held at a New York City health center seeks to help prospective adolescent mothers and fathers "learn who they are individually, why they became parents so unexpectedly and so early in life and how they can best accomodate the new babies that will soon be theirs".

The shift in mores towards acceptance of these young people is "credited to the honesty and outspokenness of young people themselves and the growing interest in the health of the young unwed mother and her child. This made social workers put their sights on the young fathers in the case, too." Both young people generally believed they were deeply in love and had emotional problems dealing with the pregnancy. "We began to realize we couldn't serve the girl along. She was emotionally dependent on the boy and he, too, was deeply involved." "We try to get them to see themselves first as individuals and then as parents."

All of society is not acceptant of the unwed father as the professionals in this New York health center. The key for the helping and educational professions is that the young people themselves brought about the change. The adolescent parents are resources for organizing, programming, evaluating efforts to help themselves, and informing society of their needs. Their active involvement is essential.

Ed

Herman, W. W. Fathers: What are you? Who are you? Adolescence, 1973, 8(29), 139-144.

A pediatrician of thirty years writes about fathers who are immature and unaware of their role in the family complex. He views this as a source of stress for families, wives, and children. He describes 16 "types" of these "disturbed fathers" who he feels had no discipline blended with affection from their father. He hypothesizes that these fathers then father their own children in the same way and create another generation of emotionally disturbed individuals. The author lists suggestions of how to break this cycle, primarily through medical schools and education of physicians who are in a potential place to intervene.

Some broad conclusions based on a great deal of clinical experience without mention of discussion of other factors influencing father behavior. Provides information well worth considering, especially by educators of both adolescents and people in the medical profession.

Ed
5,17
22

Hill, K., & McFarlane, A. Family life education--for men. Extension Service Review, 1971, 42(10), 6-7.

A film lecture series for 200 Missouri lower Bootheel area farm laborers discussed priorities in human needs, ways to unfreeze family communications, sexuality, family planning, changing masculine and feminine roles--parental and spousal. The program was conducted through the Missouri Associated Migrant Opportunity Service (MAMOS) and funded by the Office of Economic Opportunity. The family life courses were offered through Adult Basic Education and High School Equivalency centers. Participants attended three two-hour sessions.

The usual guide sheets and wordy publications were of little value for this group and thus films were utilized. Evaluation indicated increased audience participation as the program proceeded, more blacks than whites seemed comfortable in admitting they assumed wifely chores (whatever this means), they exhibited insight into the need for responsible sex behavior, younger white men were more likely to have defeatist attitudes such as "Some people are just born bad", a realization that double standards have been destructive to men as well as to women, the instrumental role of the man has devalued feelings of self-worth and the importance of emotionally supportive roles, one man said he didn't see any reason for educating girls, blacks were more responsive to the need for communicating on the basis of individual humanness rather than perpetuating racial, sexual, and status barriers.

The evaluation of this program was quite subjective, perhaps that is all that was possible. The program vividly points out the potentialities of unlimited scope for working through existing channels in father education. It also indicates the severity of a sense of failure when role rigidity is valued. Various biases of the professionals writing the article were evident. The article sensitizes one to how things are in the world.

E Hoffman, L. W. The father's role in the family and the child's peer-group adjustment. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1961, 7(2), 97-105.

Sample: 445 boys and girls in the third through sixth grades of Detroit elementary schools. White, nonimmigrant, intact families which represented a socioeconomic cross section of the population of the larger study from which this data was taken.

Measures: Questionnaires administered to the children, attitude scales were completed by mothers and fathers, and 120 mothers were interviewed in homes. Child's peer relationships were assessed through teacher ratings and classroom sociometrics.

Data Analysis: Method of analysis and statistics were not reported in this article.

Results: (1) Both boys and girls wanted to be most like the parent they perceived as having power. (2) Boys attributed more discipline, positive affect, and instruction to fathers than girls did. (3) The only differences of social class which approached significance was the tendency for white collar boys, compared with blue, to report more participation of fathers in routine child care activities.

Conclusions: For boys, it was found that a warm companionship

with the father is clearly related to peer-group adjustment. A positive relationship with the father for boys relates also to self-confidence, assertiveness, athletic and intellectual ability, popularity, and skills in the peer group.

This article seemed to be a speech reporting partial data from a larger study with implications given that were applicable for that particular group. Data on effects of fathers was not directly measured but was taken from existing data, a weakness especially when the generalizations and conclusions are so broad. These conclusions were reported with no data given as a basis of evaluation. In part of the study, only the mother was interviewed, a methodological weakness that should not be present in studies on fathering. The study does raise some interesting questions related to fathering behaviors.

T Howells, J. G. Fathering. In J. G. Howells (Ed.), Modern perspectives in international child psychiatry. (Vol. 3) Edinburgh: Oliver & Boyd, 1969. Pp. 261-297.

Howells has reviewed much of the literature relating to fathering. He looks at anthropology, animal research, and the little societal fathering research which has been done. He concludes that "fathering has suffered gross neglect in both the theory and practice of child psychiatry". (5) Research seems to indicate that a great variety in the means of care of the young exist. It is done by the mother or the father, both or others. Parenting is more important than who the parent is. Howells maintains that "fathering is as distinct an entity as mothering", and both are important elements in the family matrix.

This type of evidence tends to support the thesis that fathers can be nurturant and actively participate in the lives of their families. Howells recognizes the father/child relationship as 1/4 of the interaction network family psychiatry operates from. It is critical to have an understanding of what happens in the father/child relationship in order to provide stimuli conducive to child mental health.

It is important to have basic knowledge of what fathers do across cultures and within this culture. It would then seem logical to identify those characteristics which are desireable. Suggestions for future change in social policy, individual family dynamics, and personal supports for fathers and mothers to improve their parenting role, as well as supports which promote self fulfilling lives of individuals could have been outlined. If parenting can effectively be done in a variety of ways, what do we need to do in order to provide for alternatives?

P 6 Joffe, R. Questions to a father. In L. K. Howe (Ed.), The future of the family. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1972. P. 85.

I once asked my father
What really is a cat?
And all he said was
"Please pass me my hat".

I once asked my father
What really is a goat?
And all he said was
"Please hand me my coat".

I once asked my father
How do you spell achoo?
All he said was,
"God bless you!"

And then I asked my father
Are you going someplace?
And I could tell he was mad
By the expression on his face.

So take my advice
And don't ask your father
Because you know
He'll think you're a great bother.

This poem by an eleven-year-old girl speaks to the very real feelings that children get that father's time is more valuable than theirs and to try to make contact with him is to "bother" him. Other than that, it speaks for itself.

P 5,8,9 12,23 Jonas, G. Jonas & daughters. MS Magazine, May 1974, 11(11), 112.

Jonas describes his father as short-tempered, arbitrary, and out of touch with the times. He was going to be a consistent father, above all. He and his wife share the authority role. They periodically compare notes to make sure they agree on basic principles. He describes his approach to sex education as open, answering questions his girls ask and that it is "educational for little children to see their parents' sexual organs once in a while".

Parents have the option of trying to prevent problems from occurring. It takes work and love. "I am aware that I cannot protect Sarah and Phoebe forever, and that they will eventually resent me for even trying. But when that time comes, I want them to be ready and able to make sense out of their world, and strong enough to live in it."

This article is most useful as an educational resource on fathers and sex education of their daughters.

Ed 22 Kerckhoff, R. K., Habig, M., & The Family Coordinator Family Life Education Panel, 1976. Parent education as provided by secondary schools. The Family Coordinator, April 1976, 25(2), 127-130.

The article summarizes findings derived from 44 panel members conducting a questionnaire with a secondary school teacher in their respective areas. Parent education was defined by the panel as educating future parents on child rearing and/or educating students on the physical and psychological development of children.

Well written article. It's strength is that the panel members represent almost all geographic areas of the U.S. and some areas of Canada. Follow up studies could be done with larger numbers of respondents.

E,T Lamb, M. Fathers: Forgotten contributers to child development. Human Development, 1975, 18, 245-266.

A concisely written summary of research literature aimed at producing sufficient empirical and theoretical evidence to conclude that many infants interact extensively with their fathers, and form attachments to them which differ qualitatively from mother-infant relationships. The article urges that research and theory pay more attention to the role of fathers in the socialization of children. A good starting source for studies on effects of fathers on sons. Good bibliography.

T Lederer, W. Historical consequences of father-son hostility. Psychoanalytic Review, 1967, 54(2), 52-80.

The author reviews mythology and biblical stories to support his basic premise that the Oedipal conflict in fact does exist, and that hostility between father and son is necessary for survival of the species. "Love does not conquer all, nor does it suffice. Man needs to love but also to oppose." The author postulates that:

(1) Aggression exists between fathers and sons in a vertical battle so that aggression will not "bend horizontally to rage between one ingroup and another". In other words, create war.

(2) Aggression needs to exist between fathers and sons in order for the son to learn about himself by testing himself against the strength of his father.

The author states that through time the murderous intent of fathers was destined to fail to destroy their sons by:

(a) protection and intervention by women and society; (b) submission of sons to the power of their fathers.

One needs to question whether the author's basic premises are (1) culturally derived and (2) empirically proven. I question the credibility of making any generalizations or hypotheses based on mythological and biblical stories unless one is steeped in the psychoanalytic tradition. A "colorful" rather than credible article.

T LeMasters, E. E. The passing of the dominant husband-father. Impact of Science on Society, 1971, 21(1), 21-30.

LeMasters traces the role of the father from the Victorian times to the present. He sees the father's role changing from the authoritarian, decision-maker to the confused modern man. LeMasters believes one of the reasons for the father's loss of power during the last fifty years has been the urbanization and industrialization of the U.S. Fathers are not home much. In societies which have been

industrialized, fathers tend to be warm, permissive with little authority. Conditions contributing to the present condition of fathers include: divorce, paired role of husband/father, the fact that women are demanding equality, youth often have more knowledge and skills useful in the present. Fathers are left with little power within the family and are confused about their role.

LeMaster does not predict an increased degree of father participation in child care, but rather, an increase in institutionalized programs (daycare). Unlike LeMasters, this writer believes that the family does not have to disappear. With added support systems, training, and a balance of power, families can be effective units of socialization, education, emotional support, physical care for adults and children.

This article is useful in pinpointing areas which need added educational support. For instance, prejudice can be examined, community supports, changes in legislation and self development programs implemented. Fathers can provide an important part of child rearing, if they want to.

P 5,16,21 23 Leonard, J. The fathering instinct, working fathers. Ms. Magazine, May 1974, 11(11), 54, 55, 111.

The fathering instinct, working fathers, is an article telling the views of ten fathers. Quotes are explicit and represent a variety of experiences in fatherhood, all positive. Each father is pictured with his children. They are a father and assembly-line worker whose father left him early in his life, a lawyer who became father at 40, a father and college professor who forced his children to develop musical talents and now talks with them as adults, a single father and teacher/artist who learned more about himself since he became a real parent, a grandfather, and lawyer who enjoys this role more than parenting his own children, a single man who became father after adopting two boys and is an educator, a divorced father and model who loves sharing his life with his four month old, a graduate student who feels the affect on economics, intimacy, and feelings of having a child, a father and police seargeant who trys to impart his values and knows they may not be accepted, a wholesaler black father in an interracial family with a son who looks white and likes it.

P,Ed 9,10,14 16,23 Leonard, J. The fathering instinct. Ms. Magazine, May 1974, 11(11), 52, 53, 56, 112.

Leonard wrote a first person story of his experience as a father. His children aren't modeling their parents because their interests are different. He stayed home to care for his second child. She slept while he wrote all day. At age five, she became a friend instead of a responsibility. As a father he didn't interfere with her emotional expressions, unless invited. The children were "told that their parents have their own lives, and for the time being they must share ours".

His fathering style is best described by this quote: "Before my eyes, my children are acquiring dignity; they would be nice people to know. This is not something I ever really expected. My fathering had always taken the form of a friendly cloud that floated across the lives of the children, and paused occassionally to cast a shadow. That they would turn out to have their own weather and that I would profit by the climate, was an immense satisfaction."

This account represents one end of a continuum in regard to control of the child or allowing a child to explore. As such it is a useful resource for education.

C Levi, D. L., Stierlin, H., & Savard, R. J. Fathers and sons: The interlocking crises of integrity and identity. Psychiatry, 1972, 35(1), 48-56.

Conclusions of these authors came from independent observations made over a five year period while studying troubled adolescents and their families. They hypothesize that: (1) "In their own crises of integrity, middle-age fathers seem to suffer in a state of masked depression and consequently resigned from conflict with their sons or sought to annihilate their sons' self-esteem." (2) Middle-aged fathers and adolescent sons according to Erikson, experience personal growth crises at the same time which can cause disruption in the father-son relationship.

If fathers cannot grieve successfully unattained goals or find value in his achievements, he sees the adolescent as having open choices in work and love objects which the father may envy. The father may either disparage his son or over-identify with him in trying to relive through him what he feels he has missed.

If a father resolves this conflict, a "loving fight" ensures from which both grow and come to experience a mutual respect.

The authors' premises are illustrated by only two case studies. The total number seen was not mentioned, which makes this a small sample producing soft data. The information could have clinical implications for individual cases and for those therapists using stage crises as part of their base of clinical interpretation and treatment.

P 6,23 Levin, B. B. Where have all the fathers gone? McCalls, November 1972, 100, 46.

This short article is a review of a book called Family Matters by Dr. Lawrence H. Fuchs. A survey of 36 fifth graders is reported in which the children are asked, "What does it mean to be a father?" They were in agreement that being a father meant, "Making good money and getting a good job. Going to work every morning. Coming home with a headache." As the author notes, almost every answer describes a grim, harried man who works hard yet has no fun, feels no joy, and shares no love.

Dr. Fuchs as paraphrased by the author feels that the American male is to blame for his own predicament. He "undermined his own

authority as father and as husband when he forced his wife to do the hard work of childrearing". Dr. Fuchs also cautions that ambitious women may make the same mistake by degrading parental responsibilities in pursuit of job achievement. Dr. Fuchs advice is for fathers to be less timid about using their authority with their children. He favors new laws that will encourage business to provide work options so that fathers can fulfill their responsibilities.

While Dr. Fuchs seems to be on the right track, I am concerned that individual fathers will be held totally responsible for their lack of fathering while some of that responsibility clearly belongs to society and our economic system. While individuals can definitely make changes in their own situations, widespread change will undoubtedly come only with public education and attitude change, economic incentive for fathering behavior, and governmental support.

P Levine, J. A. Who will raise the children? New options for fathers (and mothers. Philadelphia & New York: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1976.

This book interviews men who have chosen to participate in and feel positive toward child-rearing roles. Issues covered are: Men and custory, part-time jobs for full-time fathers, single adoptive fathers, house husbands, specific changes in legislation (using Sweden as a model), and changes worth making in sex role education.

Levine's book does a good job of delineating alternatives, providing references for further information, and lending moral support to those families who are questioning traditional child-rearing modes. It is well worth reading by the general public, as well as professionals in the field.

A Linner, B. Society and sex in Sweden. Stockholm, Sweden: The Swedish Institute, 1969.

Linner's book openly discusses Swedish attitudes and systems for the human use of human beings. The Swedish philosophy surrounding the family is: Children should be wanted by their parents and society has a responsibility for assuring them the best possible environment in which to grow. Therefore, social policy concerning; sex education, abortion, family planning, parental leaves, shape equal opportunity regardless of sex. Father and mother both have legal authority over their children, both get leaves from work at the time of birth for up to 8 months. Social policy supports the family in order to increase individual and the families range of experiences.

It is difficult to filter isolated fathering role specifications out of the Swedish system. It seems more constructive to examine the philosophy of human rights and its implementation. Sweden has established a supportive national system which includes: a comprehensive public health policy, many child care centers, employment regulations and other legislations permitting maximum individual freedoms. What seemed to be lacking in the huge sex education program was a parenting component. Children are definitely wanted, but one wonders how parenting

skills are developed. This is a good start, and can help the U.S. to establish policy, hopefully avoiding some of the pitfalls Sweden experienced.

T Lynn, D. B. The process of learning parental and sex role identification. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1966, 28, 466-470.

Lynn presents a theoretical rationale of why males and females tend to have different attributes. He sees the process of the child's identification with a particular parental role as the primary factor in the child's sex role identification. Initially children, both boys and girls, identify more with mothers. Boys must then switch to a masculine identity. The masculine role is defined rather amorphously through media, and heresay, rather than through direct modeling. Girls have a person to model their sex-role, making identification easier. Through the complicated process boys must go through application of problem-solving skills is necessary to develop. This would account for males apparent ability to be more skilled in problem-solving than females. A generalized learning strategy is established. Lynn also hypothesizes: that males are more anxious regarding sex role identification than females; Males are more hostile toward females than females are toward males; with an increase in age the masculine role becomes more strongly identified; a larger proportion of females show preference for the role of the opposite sex; a greater proportion of females than males adopt aspects of the role of the opposite sex. Lynn used for evidence in his theory a survey of college students on parental values and attitudes toward childrearing.

This theoretical model has some valid implications for fathering. If fathers were present and actively participating in family activities, boys would have a person for sex-role identification. Academic skills like problem solving would perhaps, become more generalized to both sexes, typical sex role behaviors would become more androgenous, anxiety levels would go down and people would be free to pursue their own personhood.

T 7 McBride, A. B. Can family life survive? American Journal of Nursing, 1975, 75, 1648-1656.

This article is a theoretical attempt to look at the problems confronting the American family, probable contributing factors to these problems, and some suggested solutions. The author, in agreement with many other, sees this period of time as one of rapid change in the family structure. Traditional family life is under attack for being so bound by role specialization (ala Parsons and Bales) that its members are not permitted the free assumption of their unique identities. The feminist movement is interpreted as a result of women challenging their traditional roles of wife and mother. There is an increasing realization that mom cannot handle and does not want sole responsibility for childrearing. She wants to share that responsibility with the father figure in

the family. Both parents need societal support in assuming equal responsibility for child rearing task. A re-assessment is needed of what father can do and what mother must do.

Although this article does a good job of looking at the problem, the only solutions offered are philosophical rather than practical. Even if everyone agrees that the father should be more involved in childrearing, how to implement that is the question to be addressed. This article is thought provoking, especially one pertinent quote from the White House Conference on Children and Youth in 1960; "The current American attitude toward the family is akin to what happens when a man is hit by a truck--no one dares to touch him for fear of hurting him more. Some pray--and all resolve not to get involved." (p. 1653)

Ed 22 Murphy, C. G., & Murphy, C. Preparing boys for parenthood. Forecast for Home Economics, 1973, 19(3), 18, 50.

Forecast for Home Economics is a magazine of suggestions for home economics instructors. This article lacked depth. I am disturbed not only at the level at which the article speaks to the home economics teacher, but also the infrequency of articles on this topic.

On a more positive note, what does the article say? Many men who are not fathers are called on to fulfill a father's role, thus we should educate for fatherhood. We should let a boy be involved in caring for young children. We should encourage children to fulfill androgenous roles. A boy who is given acceptance, warmth, support, and love is most likely to develop these qualities himself. A democratic family where decision making is shared by parents and children helps a child develop responsibility. A child will model his parents more if they are democratic rather than authoritarian or permissive. Too many books of advice to parents direct themselves only to mothers. As a teacher, dealing with attitudes and values is a rewarding challenge.

E Mussen, P. H., Boutourline Yound, H., Gaddini, R., & Morante, L. The influence of father-son relationships on adolescent personality and attitudes. 1976, 4, 3-16.

Sample: 311 adolescent boys ranging in age from 11.5 to 17.5 years, of Italian descent in four localities: Rome, Florence, Palermo, and Boston, Mass.

Measures: Mothers interviewed on a number of aspects of child-rearing and family environment to determine "sufficient paternal affection group", and "insufficient paternal affection group". Personality data came from a standardized personality test and an Imagination Test.

Data Analysis: Data from each of the various locales were analyzed separately. A greater number of statistically significant differences would have been obtained if the data had been added. Frequency distributions for imagination test scores, and interview rating scales were used.

Results: Those boys whose fathers were insufficiently affectionate were less socially oriented, less concerned about their relationships

with peers and perhaps less well-adjusted socially than their peers who received adequate paternal affection. The adequate paternal affection group reported more friends, were more secure, self-confident, and happier in social relationships. They were also calmer, more achievement oriented, and manifested fewer needs to manipulate and control others.

Conclusions: The degree of affection a father gives his son is related to the latter's behavior, personality, and attitudes. Certain aspects of the data did not support the "identification with the aggressor" theory which says negative feelings should be reduced when a boy identifies with the aggressor. The opposite was true. The boys in the insufficient affection group feel more dominated and rejected by their parents, more unhappy, less calm, and less devoted to their fathers.

Two other hypotheses of identification were suggested: developmental identification and role theory, for which the data supplied supporting evidence.

In this study, masculinity is again, narrowly defined according to the present American cultural stereotype. Mothers, exclusively, were used as interviewees which weakens the methodology. The cross-cultural, longitudinal aspect of the study is admirable. A clearly written, exploratory study which raised good questions for further research and theory development.

T 1 Nash, J. The father in contemporary culture and current psychological literature. Child Development, 1965, 36, 261-297.

Nash examines the evidence for viewing our society as matricentric. Most of this evidence seems to come from the writings and studies of social scientists who have focused mainly on the mother-child interaction, seeing the father in the role of provider, both of material and psychological support for the mother. Nash makes the observation that perhaps our view of society as matricentric is false since we have little actual data from fathers themselves. Indeed, in the few studies that have asked fathers to rate their role as a father in relation to their other roles, they gave a higher priority to fathering than the researchers had predicted.

Nash's literature review of the father in our culture and psychological literature is very well done. He covers a wide range of material and makes some new and provocative interpretations. His article is helpful for getting an overview of the fathering research in 1965. It is interesting to note that his suggestions for research are indeed areas that received subsequent study.

E Parke, R. D., & Sawin, D. B. The father's role in infancy: A re-evaluation. Family Coordinator, 1976, 25, 365-371.

The father's role in infancy is changing. This article briefly reviews cross cultural, biological, historical, and comparative sources. Evidence indicates that fathers are as capable as mothers in nurturance, social interaction, and caretaking competence. A

series of observation studies of father-interaction with the newborn were described. This also supports men's abilities to actively participate in childrearing.

Implications drawn from this study touch on educational directions. "Fathers, in spite of their interest and competence, clearly need support--just as mothers need support." Some of this "support" will be a basic knowledge of what behaviors to exhibit with tiny babies. Perhaps a post-partum parent support group much like the neonatal Lamaze groups would help. It is known that mothers become more attached to their infants when in extended contact with their infant during the first three post delivery days. Sweden has research which supports the same attachment process for father when the father partakes in caregiving skills during the postpartum hospital stay. If we want father to become more active in the lives of their children, more opportunities for interaction must be supported, as well as, more educational experiences for fathers and mothers to promote better environments for children.

E 11 Pedersen, F. A., & Robson, K. S. Father participation in infancy. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1969, 39, 466-472.

The authors feel that fathers are more involved in infant care now than ever before because the American family is increasingly child-centered and parental roles are less rigidly defined. Fathers have yielded some of their paternal authority to the mother and taken on some of mom's nurturant and affectional qualities. However, fathers still differ from mothers in two ways: (1) they are a novel stimulus for the infant because of less contact with him and (2) the father's role in child care is optional, i.e., he can choose to change diapers, play with the baby, etc., while mom has to do it (or hire someone to assume the caretaker role).

Data was collected for a sample of 45 families matched for age, education, and socio-economic status. There were 21 male and 24 female first-born infants in the families sampled. Home observations were done when the infants were 8 months and 9-1/2 months of age. Data was collected from the mother concerning the father's involvement with the child and his participation in child care. There were eight measures of paternal behavior including such things as irritability level, investment, and apprehension over well-being. Six infant behavior measures were obtained including attachment to father, reaction to strange male's approach, and indications of distress in a situation involving separation from mother. The results were reported in summary fashion only. Data indicates that there are different factors operating in the attachment of male and female babies to their fathers. The correlation between paternal behavior and infant behavior is more clearcut for male infants.

The most glaring fault of this study on father participation is the failure to take any data directly from the fathers! Also, the experimenters report that there is great variability in father's involvement with their infants and associate this with differences in

the personality of the fathers.

P 23 Pleck, J. H., & Sawyer, J. (Eds.) Men and masculinity. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1974.

This book is a series of essays on the male experience by various people, some known publicly and others not. Many of the essays are written from a totally personal perspective relating the author's experiences in some area of life as a male. The value of relating these personal experiences is that there do seem to be common threads running through all of them that can be identified. Also, the reader can identify with the author as a real person writing honestly, rather than a social scientist writing theroetically. However, in addition to the personal essays, there are some more theoretical ones written by social scientists. This bland of personal experiences and theoretical insights gives one an overall view of the male experience with some effort at understanding how our male stereotypes are formed in early childhood and theproblems this causes for individual men, their spouses, children, and society.

T Polatnick, M. Why men don't rear children: A power analysis. Berkeley Journal of Sociology, 1973-74, 18, 45-86.

Polatnick begins by refuting the biological and physical rationale for the traditional role of female childrearers. She focuses instead on societal questions of functionality, purpose and interest, within a power analysis. "Men (as a group) don't rear children because they don't want to rear children." They are in a position which enforces their preferences. Money is a source of power, occupational achievement is status and the more a person has the more power they have both in and out of the family. Men have power which gives them the choice.

Women are the rearers of children

Women are a powerless group vis-a-vis men

The vicious circle which keeps male power intact and females in a position of limited choice is long established.

The power analysis of roles is certainly interesting and may answer some questions about the slow rate of societal change. The sociology perspective tends to be so global that the individual positive adaptations and advancements are submerged. This article seems to suggest a need for women to attain economic power in order to attain a more equitable family relationship. It does not deal with the types of power women presently have or loose with the acquisition of new power. The problems of power within the family are complex and the solutions difficult. The article offers no suggestions, only explanations from a different viewpoint. The implications for change will involve major social changes and much time.

E Reuter, M. W., & Biller, H. B. Perceived paternal nurturance--Availability and personality adjustment among college males. Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 1973, 40, 339-342.

The relationship between various combinations of perceived paternal nurturance—availability and college males' personality adjustment was investigated.

Sample: 172 college males, ages 18-25, lower middle and middle class.

Measures: Schaefer's Parent Perception Questionnaire which related to how their father interacted with them when young was used. The Personal Adjustment Scale of Gough, and Heilbrun's Adjective Check List and the Socialization Scale of the California Psychological Inventory were used as measures of personality adjustment.

Results: Males with high paternal nurturance and high paternal availability, males with moderate paternal nurturance and high paternal availability, and males with high paternal nurturance and moderate paternal availability all achieved relatively high personality scores.

Conclusions: The boy with a non-nurturing father may be better off if his father is not very available and, an individual's perceptions of parent seem to have a very significant influence on personality development.

A very succinctly written, methodologically sound empirical study. Its weaknesses lie in the retrospective reports of the subjects and its correlational nature. One of the first studies on paternal nurturance to begin to behaviorally define paternal nurturance. A study that is a step in the right direction.

P 5,9, 18 23 Roberts, S. V. Confessions of a confirmed father. Redbook, 1973, 141, 94, 110, 112.

Steven V. Roberts is the Los Angeles bureau chief of "The New York Times", a frequent contributor to national magazines, husband and father of two children.

Parenting is a rewarding experience in which quiet and privacy are not always a choice. Kids teach you as much as you teach them. They help you understand your own parents a lot better, how parents want to do the right thing, how painful failures of communication can be, about honesty, help you re-evaluate your priorities, and they teach you the capacity for enjoyment.

Some people despise parenthood. Stevens feels this may be caused by perceptions of themselves being poorly parented, viewing parenthood as the shaping of another, fear of overpopulation, a collapse of traditional supports for married life due to mobility, fewer religious and moral structures, i.e., other living arrangements for couples.

"Family life involves a series of compromises and adjustments. Some things have to be sacrificed to make it work".

This first person article is a useful resource for men and women. Will the presence of articles on fatherhood in Redbook cause men to read the magazine or do such articles belong in traditional men's magazines?

E Rosenberg, M. Parental interest and children's self-conceptions. (Chapter 7) Society and the adolescent self-image. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1965. Pp. 128-146.

Sample: 5,024 randomly selected adolescents in tenth grade in New York State.

Measures: Guttman scale used as a measure of self-esteem. Looked at adolescent report of: (1) Parent's relationship with friends; (2) Reactions to child's academic performance; (3) Responsiveness to the child at the dinner table.

Data Analysis: Multivariate analysis. Looked at mothers separate from fathers.

Results and conclusions: A basic assumption of the study was that self-image is central to the subjective life of the individual largely determining his thoughts, feelings, and behavior. Self-esteem related to adolescent's perceived involvement in psychic and emotional life of the parent. Looked at mother and father interactions separately and found the following relationships:

(1) Exceptional maternal and paternal indifference to friends appears to be associated with low self-esteem in the child (boys and girls no specified);

(2) Indifferent responses, not punitive responses are most closely related to low self-esteem;

(3) Lower participation by parents and child in meal-time conversation related to self-esteem.

An extensive study that fits into the symbolic interaction framework. It is based totally on report of the adolescent which constitutes a weakness in methodology. The assumption is made that the behaviors looked at can actually be indicators of self-esteem. Other intervening variables were not considered. A very lengthy but interesting attempt to get at an elusive self-esteem measure and the total context in which it develops. Data is recorded keeping mothers' and fathers' responses separate but in discussion, the differential effects are not analyzed.

E Rutherford, E., & Mussen, P. Generosity in nursery school boys. Child Development, 1968, 39, 755-765.

The study was designed to test two hypotheses: (1) boys' generosity would be related to perceptions of their fathers as warm and nurturant, and (2) generosity is part of a pattern of moral characteristics, including altruism, kindness, and cooperation.

Sample: 63 middle-class Caucasion boys between the ages of 4-6 and 4-11 enrolled in nursery schools in a large California city.

Measures: Level of generosity was determined by a situational test of generosity (giving candy) and a teacher rating (Fels Scale) was used as a validity test.

Data Analysis: Generosity scores were related to data derived from children's responses in doll play, a situational test of competitiveness, and a series of 21 teachers' ratings without interrater reliability.

Results and Conclusions: Generosity in young boys was related at the .05 level of significance to their perceptions of their fathers as warm and nurturant. Based on a small sample, fathers of generous boys are more likely to respond to a child's distress with sympathy and attempts to comfort him. The second hypothesis was supported as well, which related generosity to identification with a model rather than situational experiences involving positive and negative reinforcements.

A methodologically sound, well-written, research study based on child's perceptions and teacher ratings which are the only potential weaknesses. A study that shows the importance of nurturance from fathers that could be done at different age levels.

C-22 Smith, D. E., & Sternfield, J. The hippie communal movement: Effects on child birth and development. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1970, 40, 527-530.

These authors stress the mother-child relationship during infancy and the early preschool years in the commune. The father are usually present at the birth of their child and assist the midwife. After that, they have access to their child, but the amount of contact varies from father to father. Most parents are not married to each other, although their relationships tend to be monogamous.

Education of the children on the commune is usually indicative of stability of the commune. Sex roles are de-emphasized and both girls and boys are taught music, folk arts, and crafts, and practical outdoor and domestic skills. Television is usually absent so the children are not exposed to society's stereotypes. The goal of these parents is to keep their children in the communal environment for life. However, evidence from the kibbutzem in Israel indicate that the 2nd generation is rejqcting their parents' ideology and turning to other lifestyles. The authors speculate that the same thing may be true in communes with the children eventually returning to a more conventional lifestyle.

This article gave little documentation for the ideas presented. It is hard to determine if the information given pertains to all communes, those in a certain locale, or just one or two known to the authors. It is hard to reconcile the idea that sex roles are de-emphasized with the emphasis on the mother-child relationship being so primary in the early years. It would be interesting to investigate how fathers in communes view their role and how satisfied they are with the part they play in raising their children. Longitudinal research to investigate the communal children's eventual role in their own family would help to resolve the question of what effect communal rearing has on children.

Ed 5,6 13,15 22 Steiner, G. J. Parent-teen education: An exercise in communication. The Family Coordinator, 1970, 19, 213-218.

Article describes the process and content of one program used to

improve communication between parents and teens who were experiencing conflict within the family. It was not the purpose of the program to directly deal with behavioral problems. It was decided the educational approach would create less defensiveness and resistance on the part of the families. Lecture and discussion topics were Understanding Adolescence, Barriers to Good Communication, Techniques in Good Communication, and A Reivew of Communication Techniques.

Families decided whether they wished to participate after receiving introductory information and being interviewed. Twenty-one families (59 individuals) participated. Parents could attend without children or with adolescent (age 13-18) children in addition to the labeled problem child. Two-thirds of the participants were referred by the county welfare department and school counselors. Families had a variety of socio-economic backgrounds, education of parents ranged from 8th grade to college, and 50% of the mothers worked.

Sessions met for two hours for four consecutive weeks. Adolescent group and parent group discussions followed lecture presentations. Then all discussants met together to share what groups had discussed. The educators role in the large group was to help discussants think through and broaden perspectives on conflicting problems. Further information was given when appropriate. Opinions, when given were labeled as such. Alternatives were discussed but the final decision on topics were left with the families.

Evaluation indicated the educational focus introduced the participants to each other's ideas, helped to stimulate parental thinking and caused parents to evaluate and clarify their own concepts and methods of dealing with their children.

For the professional implementing an educational program, the in-depth process and content description in this article would be useful. On the critical, while no one should be forced to attend an educational program, both teens and parents should participate in the program to receive benefit from the program.

T Taconis, L. The role of the contemporary father in the rearing of children. Educational Research, 1969, 11(2), 83-94.

Taconis reviews the literature particularly in reference to the British school system. It seems that the father in Britain is suffering in much the same way he is in the U.S. Freudian concepts begin the article and continue through the "hysterical" writers of the 1950's, who feared the dangers of maternal dominance. Much research in the late 1950's and 60's show the father participating in a "helping" role. Studies relating to father separation and juvenile delinquency are also cited. Studies of the father in sex role development are also briefly discussed. Basically, Taconis is attempting to gather evidence of the importance of the father in the child's development, and establish the fact that fathers are taking a more active role in the rearing of their children. From the facts, Taconis drawn implications for the British schools. Schools will support non-sexist roles in the primary area with toys and books, at the junior level with boys and girls attaining

domestic and industrial skills, at the professional level with Child Psychology emphasizing the importance of the father. She sees the media as an educational force, which can inform fathers of their effect in sex role development and education. He needs to become aware of his function.

Certainly the role of the father is important. Taconis has made some excellent suggestions for the educational system. These could have been elaborated a bit more. The studies cited, are rooted in Freudianism. This makes the role of father a crutial one, rather than a role that is desireable, offering much personal satisfaction, and chosen.

E, Ed Tasch, R. J. The role of the father in the family. Journal of Experimental Education, 1952, 20, 319-361.

A lengthy investigation designed to obtain information concerning the role of urban American fathers.

Sample: 85 fathers having a total of 160 children, 80 boys and 80 girls taken from four of the five boroughs which make up greater New York City. A diverse group from the standpoint of nationality, religious affiliation and occupation. Fathers were 30-50 years, two-thirds of whom had been fathers five years or longer.

Measure: Flexible Interview method used by Jersild.

Data Analysis: Categories were derived from the interviews in the areas of activities and concepts. Categories already established for the analysis of "satisfactions" and "problems" were used.

Results:

A. Reported activities in which father participated with children most frequently: (1) Routine daily care and safety; (2) Related to development of intellectual abilities and interests; (3) Activities related to development of motor abilities, acquisition of skills and interests; (4) Activities related to going places of recreation and amusement; (5) Activities concerned with the development of social standards, conduct, and control.

B. Less frequently reported: (1) Activities related to emotional development; (2) Activities related to moral and spiritual development; (3) Development of personality characteristics.

A father's job analysis was developed, inferred from the reported activities: (1) Child rearer; (2) Guide and Teacher; (3) Companion; (4)Disciplinarian and Authority; (5) Maintains and preserves family unity; (6) Provider of emotional security; (7) Economic provider; (8) Example of masculinity.

Of these, comparionship was felt to be the greatest "satisfaction" and routine care the greatest "problem". The father's function as rated by the fathers differed from the analysis of activities. The father saw himself as: (1) Economic provider; (2) Guide and teacher; (3) Contributor to species; (4) Authority; (5) Protection, stability, emotional security; (6) Companion.

P Thomas, M., & Friends. Free to be you and me. New York: Bell Records, 1972.

This is a record for "children of all ages". It challenges traditional sex role stereotypes in a way children can understand with materials like these we can help help children to be less constrained, more expressive, and more self-aware. Selections include: free to be you and me, when we grow up, parents are people, helping, it's all right to cry, brothers and sisters, William's doll, girl land, glad to have a friend like you. They are all excellent.

P Winter, R. Psychologists sound off on what makes a good father. Science Digest, June 1973, 14-18.

A mini review of literature written for the general public on the topic of fatherhood. Quotes several research articles on the topics of the absent father, the father's participation in child rearing, fathers and masculinity, and discipline in the father-child relationship.

Based on this review, the author defines the nurturant male as being comfortable about being a male, secure in his own self-concept so he does not need to compensate or compete with his son. A good father is able to be flexible in his choice of a variety of activities.

The author offers some "how to" to readers, how much time, how much authority, listening, etc., and gives characteristics of a man who would be a good father.

A limited but good review and interpretation of the literature. Supportive of the nurturant male and the importance of the father's role though could have been more strongly stated. Some of the "how to" suggestions are questionable.

III. FATHER ABSENCE

A. PHYSICALLY ABSENT

Bell

Fish

Schauer

Skolnick

T,E 20 Aldous, J. Children's perceptions of adult role assignments: Father absence, class, race, and sex influences. Journal of Marriage and Family, 1972, 34, 55-65.

The researchers hypothesized that children's perceptions of adult role assignment would be influenced by father absence. Race, class, and sex were other variables that were examined. Low income, preschool black and white children from father absent and father present homes were interviewed concerning their perceptions of which sex performed conventional adult roles. A comparison of middle and lower class, preschool, father present subjects was also made.

The results showed that despite contradictions in their own family experience to the customary adult division of labor, neither father absent nor lower class subjects displayed consistent differences from father present or middle class subjects in their perceptions. Sex of subjects also failed to show differences in perception.

The methodology in this study was carefully constructed. Considering all of the difficulties encountered in a survey study with such a varied population, the researchers were very careful to control for relevant variables, such as SES, surrogate father figures, etc. It is also significant that the researchers recognized the importance of measuring perceptions of the subjects.

T,E 20 Anderson, R. E. Where's Dad? Paternal deprivation and delinquency. Archives of General Psychiatry, 1968, 18(15), 641-649.

The purpose of this study is to investigate the effect of antecedent paternal deprivation on the incidence of juvenile delinquency. The investigators define paternal deprivation as absence of both the natural and the surrogate father. Data was collected through interviews of the children.

The results of the study show paternal deprivation to have a significant effect on the incidence of juvenile delinquency. Further, a higher correlation was found between father absence and juvenile delinquency than between mother absence and juvenile delinquency. Paternal deprivation in delinquent development seems to be age related. Differences between the delinquent group and the control group first appear after age four and become highly significant after age twelve. When a surrogate father was substituted it seemed to reduce the amount of delinquency. This data is consistent with the psychoanalytic position which states that the father is important for the post-oedipal stage which instills adequate internal controls over behavior.

This study did not control for SES, sibling distribution or reason for father absence and, therefore, it is unclear how much interaction these variables may have. It did, however, look at the child's age at onset of father absence and made some useful conclusions.

T 20 Atkinson, B. R., & Ogston, D. G. The effect of father absence on male children in the home and school. Journal of School Psychology, 1974, 12(12), 213-221.

This article compared the behavior of young and adolescent male children from intact and from fatherless homes. Behavior was measured in the home, the school, and informal settings by means of questionnaires completed by the mothers, teachers, and children themselves. Differences in the moral values, as reflected in the reasons for and the severity of punishment and responsibilities away from the home, were reported by the children and their mothers. Thirty father absent families were used with a control group of forty intact families. All of the families were lower income.

It was concluded, "in general, the behavior of children with and without fathers is not appreciably different except that parental disciplinary behavior may vary as a function of the father's absence.

There are numerous relevant variables which this study does not control for. Among these variables are: sibling distribution, surrogate father figures, reason for father absence, age at onset of father's absence. The conclusions could have had greater value had the study included these variables.

T,E 20 Baggett, A. T., Jr. The effect of early loss of father upon the personality of boys and girls in late adolescence. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, North Texas State University, 1967.

This study investigated the effect of early father loss on various personality related variables. Loss of father had to occur by age eight with no subsequent paternal substitute in the home. A battery of psychological testing was used for data collection. The tests included the Rotter Incomplete Sentence Test and various projective instruments.

The results are as follows: (1) boys orphaned by death of father experienced more disruptive adjustment than non-orphaned boys; (2) boys who were fatherless for reasons other than death were more adversely effected than those orphaned by death; (3) girls were effected by loss of father but the manner of the loss had no effect; (4) boys father orphaned by death were less assertive than non-orphaned boys; (5) there was no significant difference in assertiveness between the two groups of orphaned boys; (6) girls' assertiveness was not affected by father loss; (7) father loss had no effect for any group on the hostility-friendliness measures; (8) father loss did not affect boys masculinity or femininity; (9) girls orphaned by death of father were more feminine than both non-orphaned girls and girls who experienced father loss due to reasons other than death.

This study did not control for SES. The results of this study are not consistent with the majority of studies; this could suggest either a significant unmeasured influence of socio-economic status, invalid indicators in some areas or the need for further analysis of the data.

T,E 20 Baker, L. Impact of father absence on personality factors in children. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1967, 37(11), 269.

The objectives of this study are to "evaluate the effects of father absence in interaction with selected parent-child personality variables and parent-child relationship dimensions on certain personality characteristics of children; and, to investigate family structure so as to learn which pathways of experience mediate the impact of father absence on the child." Data collection was done with teacher interviews and projective testing, and, a control group was used. Results and analysis were not available in the journal.

This study did not control for relevant variables ranging from SES to surrogate father figures.

T,E 20 Baker, S. S., Fagen, E., Fischer, E., Janda, & Love, L. Impact of father absence on personality factors of children. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1967, 37, 269. (Abstract)

This article studied the effect of father absence on personality factors in military children. Although the investigators did not control for SES, they did control for several relevant variables. The general finding of the study was that male children are more effected by father absence than are female children.

It is questionable if a study of military children can be generalized to a civilian population due to many factors, one significant one being the availability of male role models on a military base.

T,E 20 Barclay, A., & Cusuman, D. R. Father absence, cross sex identity and field dependent behavior in male adolescents. Child Development, 1967, 38(8) 243-250.

This study investigated the effects of father absence on cross-sex identity and field dependency in male adolescents. It was found that father absent male adolescents were more field dependent than were father present male adolescents. It was also found, however, that the masculinity scores of the two groups did not differ significantly nor were there differences in indices of cross-sex identity. The authors reconcile this apparent difference by hypothesizing that the father absent adolescents actually do start with a lower masculinity level (which accounts for increased field dependent behavior), but, they also have a compensatory masculinity drive which shows up on the Gough femininity scale as not significantly different from the scores of the father present group. The total sample is made up of 40 male adolescents with a mean age of fifteen. It is a random sample from a large integrated high school. Out of the forty adolescents, twenty were father absent and twenty were father present.

This study does not control for SES, age at onset of father absence, sibling distribution or reason for father absence. Because none of these variables are measured it is difficult to know if there are interacting variables which were not measured.

The authors' explanation for the apparent contradiction in their

data is speculative. They present little reason to subscribe to the compensatory masculinity model, especially since this was not part of their original hypothesis but an addendum to their results.

C Bartemier, L. The contribution of the father to the mental health of the family. The American Journal of Psychiatry, 1953, CX, 277-280.

From his experience in a clinic concerned with early human development and from his Freudian background, the author outlines his views on the importance of fathers. His certainty that the father is only of indirect importance in infancy dates this article. Though titled the father's contribution, the article mostly addresses itself to the mother-child relationship, with the father's role that of supporting and keeping the mother happy. In respect of being fatherless, he sees a grim situation for boys. They can only identify with their mothers and even a father substitute doesn't save the child from a "hazardous" situation.

The article presents a point of view once generally held and respected. Certain recent research has demonstrated that fathers can play a very different part. The limitations of clinical opinions combined only with clinically derived theories can be seen. As has since happened on the subject of fathers and infancy, it is valuable to introduce experimental study particularly of non-clinical populations to supplement clinical theory. Father-absence too, calls for a multi-dimensional approach.

T Ed 20 Becker, S. Father absence and its relationship to creativity. Graduate Research in Education and Related Disciplines, 1974, 7(2), 32-52.

This study found a correlation between father absence and creativity although the results were not conclusive. The conclusion was, ". . . those who are most influenced by their mothers will more likely exhibit the primary abilities needed for creative expression than those strongly influenced by their fathers".

Bernard, S. E. Fatherless families: Their economic and social adjustment. Boston: Florence Heller Graduate School, Brandeis University, 1964.

Unable to locate.

T,E 20 Biller, H. B. A note on father absence and masculine development in young lower class Negro and white boys. Child Development, 1968, 39(10, 19), 1003-1006.

This study looked at the relation of father absence and sociocultural background to masculine development. Subjects were six-year-old lower class Negro and white boys. Brown's IT scale was administered to measure sex-role orientation. White father present boys were found to be the most masculine, there was no significant difference between white father absent and Negro father present boys and the Negro father absent were the least masculine. No significant differences relating to either

sex-role preference or teachers' ratings of masculinity on a multi-dimensional scale were found. The results suggest that underlying sex role orientation is more influenced by father availability and family background than are more behavioral aspects of masculinity.

Biller controlled for variables such as sibling distribution, length and cause of father absence, etc. Unfortunately, he only studied one socio-economic group in this article. His conclusions are drawn directly from the data and are not at all speculative and his methodology is sound.

T,E 20 Biller, H. B. Father absence, maternal encouragement, and sex role development in kindergarten age boys. Child Development, 1969, 40(8), 539-546.

The purpose of this study was to ascertain the effects of father absence and degree of maternal encouragement of masculine behavior on boys' sex role development. The researchers matched kindergarten age father present and father absent boys for SES, age, I.Q., and sibling distribution.

Compared to father absent boys, father present boys were found to be more masculine in projective sex role orientation and slightly more masculine in projective sex role orientation and slightly more masculine in game preference but were not significantly different in terms of a rating scale measure of overt masculinity. For father absent boys the degree of maternal encouragement of masculine behavior was related to masculinity of game preference and the rating scale measure of overt masculinity.

Biller's methodology is sound. He controls for such important variables as SES and sibling distribution. His findings are consistent with other studies which show that father absence is more associated with decreased masculinity measures on projective tests, but that more manifest measures of masculinity do not significantly differ from father present boys.

T 20 Biller, H. B. The mother-child relationship and the father absent boys personality development. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1971, 17, 227-241.

This article suggests that the mother-son relationship can have either a healthy or pathological effect on the father absent boy's sex role and personality development. Variables considered were maternal attitudes towards absent fathers, maternal overprotection, maternal rejection of son as related to her projection of her attitude concerning the absent father and sociocultural factors. The importance of the mother having a positive attitude towards males and her son participating in masculine activities was emphasized.

This article was a review of literature, there were no experimental manipulations. The article did not claim to be more than interpretive and, therefore, is not subject to methodological criticism.

T,C Ed,E 20 Biller, H. B. Paternal Deprivation (1st ed.). Massachusetts: Lexington Books, 1974.

The thesis of this book is that paternal deprivation is a significant factor in the etiology of psychological and social problems. Paternal Deprivation deals with every imaginable aspect of development as related to loss of father.

The book reviews, analyzes, and integrates the literature on father absence in a comprehensive style. It also makes some important critiques on methodology in this research.

Paternal Deprivation is successful at proving its above stated thesis. It is well written for readability without sacrificing any scholarly style.

Examples of the diverse range of topics that the book covers are: female homosexuality; types of father absence; methodological considerations; sex role and school achievement, etc.

T,E 20 Biller, H. B., & Bahm, R. M. Father absence, perceived maternal behavior, and masculinity of self-concept among junior high school boys. Developmental Psychology, 1971, 4(8,10), 178-181.

This study examined the relationship between the perception of maternal encouragement of masculine behavior and masculinity of self-concept in father absent and father present boys. The investigators used ten early father absent boys (where onset of absence was before age five), ten late father absent boys (where onset of absence was after age five) and twenty father present boys.

Compared to the father present boys, the early father absent boys were found to have significantly lower masculine self-concepts. "For early father absent boys, but not for late father absent boys or father present boys a significant positive relationship was found between perceived maternal encouragement of aggression and masculinity of self concept."

SES was controlled for and there was no surrogate father in the home. Other potentially relevant variables that were controlled for included: I.Q.; age; sibling distribution and grade level. A questionnaire was also administered to examine family background in order to ascertain variables such as reason for father absence.

Just like Biller's other work, the methodology here is strong.

This study has some important clinical implications since it presents a condition where maternal behavior in a single parent family can modify some detrimental effects of father absence.

C Blechman, E. A. A problem-solving training package for the single-parent family. Yale University.

T Blechman, E. A., & Manning, M. A reward-cost analysis of the single-parent family. In E. J. Mash et al. (Eds.), Behavior modification and families. New York: Brunner/Mazel, 1976. Pp. 61-90.

T Brandwein, R. A., Brown, C. A., & Fox, E. M. Women and children last: The social situation of divorced mothers and their families. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1974, 36, 498-514.

The focus of this review is on the mother-and-family unit which remains after the father leaves and emphasizes the consequences to the unit of being headed by a woman. Concentrating on separated and divorced mothers and excluding widows and never-married mothers, the authors found the literature to perpetuate society's stigmatization of the female-headed single parent family as deviant and pathological.

Initially examining family functions in the single parent family, they note the effects of poverty, downward economic mobility, discrimination against women, Parsonian values, assumptions built into social support systems, lack of day care facilities, and society's stigmatization of the divorced mother on the family's economic functions, authority structure, domestic responsibilities, and emotional support system, with documentation from the literature reviewed.

Secondly, the father absence literature (which attempts to demonstrate paternal absence is a cusative factor in childhood pathology) is reviewed critically. Brandwein, Fox, and Brown point out that these studies deal primarily with boys and make little effort to control for variables often concurring with father absence (e.g., poverty). Discussing this body of research in terms of family functions, the authors emphasize the effects of the community and society's differential treatment and expectations of mothers and fathers as financial providers, authority figures, caregivers with children, and providers of emotional support.

Questions for further research are posed in economic, authority, role, and stigma contexts. The authors conclude that present assumptions and policies relating to the single-parent female-headed family are based on insufficient and incomplete information.

The issues raised by Brandwein, Brown, and Fox are well-discussed, the criticisms logically-supported, and the concern legitimate and necessary. Including pamphlets, books, articles, and papers, more than 90 writings were reviewed as a basis for this accurate critique. The paper is useful as an introductory evaluation of the work which has been done in the field and as a conceptualization of valuable directions to pursue in future research.

A Boyle, W. T. The single-parent family: Some sociological and psychological characteristics and their implications for social policy decisions. Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, Washington, D.C., April 1975.

C,T Ed 20 Brodis, N. F. Parent-child relationship and self concept as related to differential academic achievement of adolescent siblings in father absent families. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Cornell University, 1969.

This dissertation focused on styles of maternal practices as related to differential academic achievement in father absent families. A father present group was not used for comparison.

Theoretically, this study could be more valuable had a control group been used. There could be important clinical implications for school psychologists but it is difficult to know how much of a role maternal practices actually play when several relevant variables are not taken into account.

T Burgess, J. K. The single-parent family: A social and sociological problem. The Family Coordinator, April 1970, 19, 137-144.

As Burgess critiques the literature, its scope is narrow, traditional, and generally assumes that the absence of the appropriate sex role model results in inadequate socialization. Burgess' primary criticism of research based on this assumption is the lack of consideration of the multiplicity of contributing influences and an overemphasis on a single factor. The traditional approach and assumptions, though challenged by some, are perpetuated by mass media and popular literature's incomplete accounts of single parent families. Thus the author calls for a new respect for the single parent family as a legitimate family form and for researchers to question the traditional views and assumptions.

The social problems associated with single parent families are primary stigmatization, isolation, and lack of emotional and pragmatic supports.

Burgess raises some important social issues relating to single parenting and discusses viable solutions to some of the unique problems, especially concerning the changed marital role. The approach is unusual in its emphasis on the single parent's personal adjustment and functioning rather than the problems associated with raising children in a single parent family. With this new perspective, Burgess has made a significant contribution to the single parent family literature which warrants the attention of professionals involved with single parents as well as researchers.

T,E Burns, R. A. The effect of father absence on the development of the masculine
C identification of boys in residential treatment. Unpublished doctoral
20 dissertation, St. John's University, 1971.

The purpose of this study is to investigate the effects of father absence on boy's masculine identification. The researchers measured masculine identification on three dimensions: sex role preference, sex role adoptions, and sex role identifications. Indicators used for these dimensions were: IT scale for children, a behavioral rating scale, and draw-a-person test.

The results of the study are that sex role preferences and adoptions were masculine while sex role identification was lacking. The authors conclude, "The more manifest aspects of masculine sex roles are strongly masculine while the unconscious levels are not clearly delineated."

It is interesting to note that the authors conclusions are consistent with Biller's regarding underlying aspects of masculinity versus the more manifest ones.

Since the population studied was an institutionalized one it cannot readily be generalized to the larger population. Also preventing such a generalization is lack of control for surrogate father figures, SES, sibling distribution, etc.

This study does have clinical implications for the institutional setting. In its present form, however, it is limited to providing insight to clinicians in residential treatment programs. It does not seem to offer direct treatment alternatives for father absent boys.

T 20 Burton, R. J., & Whiting, J. W. M. The absent father and cross sex identity. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1961, 7(8), 85-95.

This paper presents cross cultural data in support of the autbor's theory of identification. The bulk of the article deals with different cultural phenomenon involved in the process of identification. Father absence is mentioned as one variable that has an influence on the identification process. The authors' conclusions regarding father absence is that boys will display confusion in sex role identification development when their father is absent.

The paper has little clinical application, although it does not attempt this either.

This study seems to be coming from a more anthropological or broad sociological framework than a psychological one. It does not deal with variables like SES or academic achievement.

T,E 20 Clarke, P. A. A study of school behavior: Effects upon boys of father absence in the home. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Maryland, 1961.

The aim of this study is to examine how father absence affects self-development of the male child, that is, boys' concept of the masculine role, anxiety level, personal and social adjustment and school achievement.

The total sample was made up of forty-four third grade boys enrolled in ten suburban schools. This sample was divided into subgroups of father absent, father present, and reason for father absence. SES was not controlled for.

There were no significant differences on any of the measures for any of the subgroups except that masculine sex role preference was less clearly defined in father absent boys than in father present boys.

Theoretically, this study is not supported by the larger body of literature, but in lieu of the lack of repeatability and questions of validity in that larger body of literature, the conclusions of this study should not be discounted.

A Clayton, P. N. Meeting the needs of the single parent family. The Family Coordinator, October 1971, 20, 327-336.

The author is involved on international and personal levels with Parents Without Partners, Inc., and speaks of the needs of single parents from this perspective. Primary needs such as emotional needs for adult companionship, social needs for support, acceptance, and involvement, assistance, and guidance in coping with domestic, financial, and child-rearing responsibilities are discussed. As a contributing solution to these needs, Clayton explains the purposes of PWP and services available. The conglomerate group is represented by hundreds of chapters worldwide, where single parents gather to consult with professionals and each other on topics such as sex education for children, self-development for adults, legal advice, loneliness, parent-child relationships, and adult dating and remarriage. Group activities provide the often-missed sense of community involvement, acceptance, and integration. Supportive services are frequently available in the form of day care cooperatives, housekeeping, and other service exchanges. PWP also serves as a resource center for information about single parent families, with influences on legislation and community services.

Clayton's article is an important contribution in terms of professionals' and researchers' realization and recognition of pragmatic issues in single parenthood.

T 20 Cortes, F., & Flemming, E. S. The effects of father absence on the adjustment of culturally disadvantaged boys. Journal of Special Education, 1968, 2, 413-420.

This study attempted to measure the effect that father absence has on culturally disadvantaged boys. Teacher ratings were used as the mode of data collection.

The authors conclude, "boys enduring a sustained period of father absence were found to be more seriously emotionally maladjusted . . . "

The researchers did not control for SES, sibling distribution, or surrogate father figures. Due to these methodological weaknesses the study is not as strong as it might have been. The indicator of teacher ratings is also of questionable validity due to possible bias.

T,E 20 Dean, K. I. Father absence, feminine identification, and assertive-aggressiveness: A test of compulsive masculinity among institutionalized Negro juvenile delinquents. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Florida State University, 1970.

The purpose of this study was to test the compulsive masculinity hypothesis. The population studied consisted of father absent fifteen, sixteen, and seventeen year old Negro delinquents who were on a sixth grade achievement level or higher. Variables looked at were sex role identification and assertive-aggressiveness. The method of data collection was a combination of individual interviews and a review of the subjects' official institutional record. The masculinity-femininity scale of the MMPI was also used. The researchers predicted

that the boys of father absent homes would show both aspects of compulsive masculinity; that is, feminine identification and excessive reactive toughness. The study also controlled for type of father absence.

The results showed that there was no evidence for greater feminine identification or reactive toughness among father absent boys as compared to father present boys.

This study is not supportive of other literature which would imply that compulsive masculinity behavior is more common among father absent boys than among father present boys.

Although SES was not controlled for the methodology was strong. Different indicators were used to measure the same variables, thereby enhancing the validity of their measures.

Erney, C. M. Meeting the needs of the fatherless family. National Conference of Social Work, Casework Papers, 1956, 60-70. New York: Family Service Association of America.

Unable to locate.

E George, V., & Wilding, P. Motherless families. London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1972.

Not found.

T Glasser, P., & Navaree, E. Structural problems of the one-parent family. Journal of Social Issues, 1965, 21, 98-109.

Since this paper follows the Parsonian model of family structure we include it as an important statement on father-absence from a theoretical viewpoint. Accepting traditional parental sex roles and functions, expressive female, instrumental male, the single parent family is reasoned to be a devient family structure. The authors see family structure as an intervening variable between the opportunity system outside the family and the socialization process of the children. In the single parent family there are bound to be time and energy limitations to function performance as well as absence of certain sex typed functions relative to which parent is absent. Father absence is seen to lead to a lower social position for the family and a lack in the link between children and community. The power structure and support system are thought to be necessarily disrupted, and possibly seen in relation only to one sex.

The dangers as seen by these authors are that the remaining parent cannot meet the needs of the children, and that the combined needs of the children may so exhaust one parent that he/she may no longer be available. Seeing poverty and one parent families as related, the authors state implications for social policy and practice. Their suggestions include social outlets and support for the mother, provision of supplimentary male figures, and subsidizing of child care and housekeeping services. They see prevention of one parent family structures as the most basic solution.

The reasoning involved follows from the traditional model. Some issues such as socio-economic loss and time-energy shortages have been supported elsewhere. But if one doesn't accept traditional, sex assigned functions, the model looses some of its impact. Such theory calls for empirical testing with attention to possible alterations to fit changing family sex role-function attitudes. One question yet unanswered is whether the need is for two adults rather than a male-female pair.

E Goldstein, H. S. Internal control in aggressive children from father-present and father-absent families. Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, March 1975, 39, 512.

The proposed model underlying this study is that in a two-parent family there exists a noncontingent love source (mother) and a performance-contingent love source (father) and that in the one-parent family the mother (usually) must provide both, thus complicating socialization in the father-absent family. It was hypothesized that children from two-parent homes would have more internalized controls than children from father-absent homes. Father absence was defined in this study as the absence of the father during the child's third through sixth years of life and for at least half of the child's life.

The subjects were 19 father-present black school-age boys (ages 8-12) and 19 father-absent black school-age boys, all of whom had been referred to a child guidance clinic because of aggressive behavior in school. Each child's fantasized consequences of aggressive behavior were measured (Wiltwyck Family Interaction Apperception Test) and were used as indicators of the degree to which the subject had internalized controls. Fantasies were then scored for the presence of aggressive themes and for awareness of the consequences of aggression.

Boys from father-present homes did not give more consequences for aggression than father-absent boys. An intergroup difference was noted in who the children fantasized administering the punishment, with father-present boys seeing punishments of family origin more frequently than boys from father-absent homes. However for both groups, mothers were seen as the actual person acting as the disciplining agent.

One weakness of the study is that the author used only male subjects and generalized the results to "children" in his conclusions. In addition, the sample was drawn from a more clinical than normal population, thus there may have been some uncontrolled effects relating to aggression. The measure used should be reviewed for validity and perhaps an additional indicator could have been used. Goldstein's finding that mothers were seen as primary disciplining agents should be further explored. One must also note that although the results did not confirm the hypothesis, the approach used in this fairly contemporary study to conceptualize the proposed differences was the traditional deviancy/pathology model.

E Goode, W. J. After divorce. Glencoe, IL: The Free Press, 1956.

Goode's book presents the first U.S. field survey focusing on the process of post-divorce adjustment within the larger framework of the kinship system and society. Godde attempted to locate and analyze the points of strain, both personal and social, and set out to test many other hypotheses including the assumption of inferiority, immaturity, neuroticism, and irrationality of divorcees, the extent of society's rejection of divorcees and their children and its meaning, and the effects of divorce on children. The study was conducted with 425 respondents who were divorced urban mothers, ages 25-38 years at divorce, living in metropolitan Detroit. Respondents were randomly selected using courthouse records and placed in one of four time groups according to the length of time divorced at interviewing. Goode gives descriptions of all related factors such as social background, SES factors, kinship support, economic status of the marriages pre-divorce, the conflict and crisis process, counseling, separation, post-divorce trauma, dating, and remarriage. An entire chapter is devoted to the effects of divorce on children. His field techniques and other methodological approaches are included in the appendices. Findings are scattered throughout the book with complex qualifying statements and contributing variables discussed in detail.

Familiarity with this pioneering work is helpful in examining current research and social attitudes. In spite of the publication date, some relatively liberal directions are pursued here and seem incredibly contemporary. The multiplicity of factors investigated makes an interactional interpretation almost prohibitive, but is consistent with Goode's stated intention to explore and describe the phenomenon of post-divorce adjustment. Replication of the study or parts of it has been a frequent suggestion of current research, perhaps indicating others' respect for Goode's work.

E Gregory, I. Introspective data following childhood loss of a parent: Pathology, performance, and potential among college students. Archives of General Psychiatry, 1965, 13, 110-126.

T,E 20 Hartnagel, T. F. Father absence and self conception among lower class white and Negro boys. Social Problems, 1970, 18(19), 152-163.

This study examined the effects of fatherlessness and race on the self conceptions of lower class adolescent males. A symbolic interactionist approach is taken. A distinction is made between actual and normative self and the categories of white and Black, father absent and father present boys are examined. "All categories showed significant differences between actual and normative self, but the magnitude of differences varies among categories: black father absent boys have smaller differences than white father absent boys; no difference between white and black father present boys. The smaller differences of the black father absent boys is the result of

their more potent actual self conceptions . . . "

Contrary to other literature which compares racial groups, no differences were found between father absent and father present boys. This could be a function of several variables which were not dealt with, SES, for example. Another possibility is that most studies look at a younger age group than did this study and a third possibility is that a symbolic interactionist approach is looking at different questions than a more conventional approach.

T,E Ed,C 20 Herzog, E., & Sudia, C. Z. Fatherless homes--A review of research. Children, 1968, 15(5), 177-182.

This is a systematic review of research of studies that have been done on fatherless families. The authors are critical of questionable methodologies ranging from the exclusion of important variables such as SES to the validity of some projective tests. The authors also point to the inconsistency in results of various studies; and, that among the studies with strong methodologies there is disagreement with an equal number of studies on either side.

Their conclusions are that: (1) existing data is insufficient to permit a decisive answer to questions about the effect of father absence on children; (2) we need to approach family research from a new perspective; and (3) we are asking the wrong question when we ask, "How much are children harmed by growing up in fatherless homes?" There are several other variables which effect child development and we should focus more on those variables.

This study is well done as it is both comprehensive and relatively objective. It is a valuable guide to family researchers in order that we do not repeat mistakes of other studies. It is also one of the only articles that attempts to tie the larger body of literature on father absence into one cohesive bundle.

T Herzog, E., & Sudia, C. Families without fathers. Childhood Education, January 1972, 175-181.

Primarily addressing themselves to the kinds of generalizations often made about children who grow up in fatherless homes, Herzog and Sudia review the literature in three areas where common generalizations are not supported and in three areas where frequent generalizations are supported by evidence. Unsupported statements fall into the three categories of school achievement, juvenile delinquency, and masculinity identity, which are discussed in great detail in Herzog and Sudia's 1973 publication, "Children in Fatherless Families", annotated previously in this bibliography. The first of three generalizations supported by evidence is that a "good" two-parent home is likely to be more favorable for the child than a one-parent home although it has been shown that a happy one-parent home is better for a child than an unhappy two-parent home. A second evidently accurate generalization relates to the crucial role of the one-parent mother. The authors feel it is difficult but necessary to distinguish between

the effects of father-absence and mother-absence. Not only does the father's absence influence the child, but also the present mother, and necessarily then, the remaining parent-child dyad. The third generalization supported by the literature is that society has viewed the single-parent family as a sick or un-family. Herzog and Sudia strongly support the rejection of this label and feel there is much wisdom in recognizing the one-parent family unit as a family form which exists and functions. One benefit from this approach might be a new focus on strengths and positive aspects rather than the traditional emphasis on problems and weaknesses. Failure to view father-absence in the context of the family and to view the family in the context of society has resulted in damaging stereotypes according to the authors, and the purpose of this article is to facilitate awareness of those failures and their far-reaching effects.

This article is essentially a summary of the authors' comprehensive review which was published in the 1973 edition of Review of Child Development Research, and is suitable introductory reading for those who do not wish to read the entire original. The present paper is less thorough although issues of bias, measure validity, and methodology are discussed. Herzog and Sudia especially stress in this writing the value of viewing the family in the context and perspectives of society.

T Herzog, E., & Sudia, C. Children in fatherless families. In B. M. Caldwell & H. N. Ricciuti (Eds.), Review of child development research (Vol. 3). Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1973. Pp. 141-232.

The focus of this 93-page review is on one question, "Is growing up in a fatherless home likely to interfere with a child achieving full potential?" The question is considered in terms of whether or not the alleged adverse characteristics are more often associated with father-absent than father-present homes, and why, if so. Ways to diminish the possible negative effects associated with growing up in a fatherless home are also discussed.

It should be noted that Herzog and Sudia reviewed 260 studies and papers, eliminating all others on the basis of several qualifiers. The studies reviewed were written within the last two decades, related to father absence, focused on boys, used controls (matched one and two-parent families), were published in the U.S., and had no serious research defects. The authors organized the literature into three categories, those studies dealing with overt socially unacceptable behavior in father-absent children (e.g., juvenile delinquency), those studies concentrating on intellectual ability (e.g., school achievement), and those studies dealing with less overt psychological and social behaviors in fatherless boys (e.g., masculine identity).

Examining the juvenile delinquency studies with the initial question in mind, Herzog and Sudia found generally mixed conclusions, with differing answers for various ages, races, and SES levels. They note several problems with what has been written in this area, one of

which is the differential treatment of father-absent and father-present boys within the legal system, which is where the samples are drawn. Herzog and Sudia point out that the statistical overrepresentation of fatherless children in reports of juvenile delinquency does not necessarily reveal the true frequency of the behavior.

Looking at the second category of literature, intellectual functioning, the authors found frequent reports of fatherless children exhibiting low school achievement. Their criticisms of these studies center on ignorance of confounding variables and using correlation interpretations of data. Many studies relate poor achievement to family status, while others have found that low academic performance is more strongly related to income and SES levels. The accuracy and consistency of father-absence definitions was found to be a confounding factor in this group of studies especially, as definitions of father-absence varied from paper to paper.

In the third category of studies, the masculine identity area was examined and criticized primarily on the basis of inaccurate measures. One such measure was a masculinity-femininity scale, which represents outmoded conceptions of masculine and feminine roles and assumes sex roles to exist on a single continuum (i.e., one who rates high on feminine behavior necessarily rates low on masculine behavior). Questions of validity and prognostic power were also raised regarding a second common measure of sex role identity, structured doll play. Assessing oedipal development, dependency, and masculine identification, this measure involves a dangerous two-leap interpretation according to Herzog and Sudia. First, the researcher must assume that the child's behavior in doll play reflects attitudes and identification, and second, that the attitude will significantly affect the individual's present and future functioning.

In summary, the authors note several important aspects of the literature. One of these is the evident use of misleading research models such as "imputed stability", that is, the predictability of long-term development from a snap-shot look at an individual. Neatness at the expense of accuracy is an important research problem and Herzog and Sudia warn against oversimplification of complex areas which can muddle perceptions. The task of question formulation holds significant traps for researchers, as evident in the review. Researchers need to move away from focusing on single variables and attend to interactions of multiple variables.

Herzog and Sudia's critical consideration of theoretical and methodological approaches to the study of father-absent children is an invaluable contribution to conscientious research on and professional care of father-absent children. Questions raised are probing and necessarily so, if the future research is to fill current gaps and expand our knowledge about the effects of father-absence. The authors demand more reputable, well-planned, high-quality theory building and research in this area and provide a definitive outline of pitfalls to avoid and goals to achieve. This review should be required reading for any student, researcher, or helping professional working in the field.

Also

Herzog, J. D. Father absence and boys' school performance in Barbados. Human Organization, 1974, 33(1), 71-83.

T,E 20 Hetherington, E. M. Effects of paternal absence on sex typed behaviors in Negro and white preadolescent males. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology, 1966, 4(10, 19), 87-91.

This study investigated the effects of race, father absence and time of departure of the father on sex typed behaviors of pre-adolescent males. Thirty-two Negro and thirty-two white first-born boys who were between nine and twelve years of age were used. The sample was divided into cause of absence groups (desertion, divorce, death, and illegitimacy). Indicators used were the IT scale and a seven-point dependence scale using raters.

Results showed that if the father left after age five, the sex-typed behaviors are not significantly different from boys of father present homes. If the father was absent in the first four years of the child's life, a significant "disruption" in sex typed behaviors occurred. Both groups of father absent males showed more dependence on peer relations than father present males. The only racial difference noted was that Negro males participated more in competitive activities involving force than did white males.

This study did not control for SES or sibling distribution. Both SES and sibling distribution have been shown in the literature to play important roles.

This article does not seem to have any clinical implications but does contribute to the theoretical body of the literature in that it shows that age of the child at onset of father absence is one important variable to be considered.

T,C Ed,E 20 Hetherington, E. M., & Deur, J. L. The effects of father absence on child development. Young Children, 1971, 26(4), 233-248.

This article is a review of literature on studies done looking at the effect of father absence on child development. Hetherington and Deur draw the following conclusions: (1) the effects of father absence are the most detrimental when the father leaves home during the preschool years, but, that this can be modified by an emotional stable, loving mother who reinforces the child for appropriate sex typed behaviors and by the presence of male siblings; (2) in males, the effects on social and personality development appears as feminized behavior during the preschool year, but, with increasing age and extra-familial interaction, these effects often disappear and are replaced by compensatory masculinity behavior; and (3) in females, the effects of father absence are minimal in the early years. In adolescence, however, difficulty in appropriate heterosexual relations may occur.

Hetherington and Deur's review of literature is valuable as one of the few articles which attempts to tie the myriad of literature on father absence together. Unfortunately, the majority of the studies

do not ask the most pertinent questions, have less than adequate methodologies and are very judgmental in nature. Their review of literature in this area would have had more value had it included critique of methodology as a main focus as did the Herzog and Sudia article.

Because of the questionable conclusions, its contribution to the clinical field is dubious. Regarding the application of such research to a clinical setting, Herzog and Sudia commented, "Practitioners and program planners are not obliged to wait for resolutions of theoretical controversies . . . But they are obliged to make sure that any conclusions accepted are based on the soundest available evidence, which has been subjected to thorough analysis and has been viewed in the context of other available evidence." (Herzog & Sudia, 1968).

E,T 23, 24 Hetherington, E. M. Effects of father absence on personality development in adolescent daughters. Developmental Psychology, 1972, 7(3), 313-325.

This study investigated the effects of father absence due to divorce or death on adolescent girls. Lower and lower middle class families were used where there were no male siblings or surrogate male role models. A control group was used.

The results yielded few deviations in traditional measures of sex-role typing, however, some significant descriptions of the subjects' interactions with males were obtained. In the daughters of divorces this took the form of proximity seeking and attention seeking behavior from males, accompanied by early heterosexual behaviors. In contrast, daughters of widows showed more avoidance and inhibition related behavior to men. The data for this behavior was gathered by means of interviews with the mothers, observational measures in a recreation center, observations of non-verbal behavior with male and female interviewers and some projective testing.

This study is valuable as it is one of the few that focuses on the effect of father absence on female children.

There are several variables which the study did not look at, such as maternal behavior towards men, age at onset of father absence, etc. Due to the lack of information regarding these variables, it is possible that father absence is a spurious variable or that there are other intervening variables. It is safe, however, to accept the results as correlational data without making any causal inferences.

T,E 20 Hetherington, E. M. Girls without fathers. Psychology Today, February 1973, 6, 46-52.

This article is a more popularized version of the 1972 article in Developmental Development by Hetherington. Though the research and results are described in both there is a slight sensational quality to this article. The main point is the thesis that in females the effects of father-absence are latent until adolescence. The language of interpretation is far less cautious than in the research journal, using terms such as "clumsily erotic" to describe daughters of divorces. The sectional headings and chosen displayed quotes dramatize the sexual

relationship differential far beyond anything called for by the evidence from a small N in a localized population. Comparing the two articles on one piece of research gives an example of how limited results are generalized in popular presentation so often. In the case of single parent-parent family studies, this could well add to the guilt and stigma phenomenon.

E T Hetherington, E. M., Cox, M., & Cox, R. Beyond father absence: Conceptualization of effects of divorce. Paper presented at the meetings of the Society for Research in Child Development, Denver, Colorado, April 1975.

Forty-eight divorced parents and their preschool children were compared to 48 similar, but intact, families. The study was longitudinal measuring at two months, one year, and two years. The assumption was that divorce is a crisis with disorganization followed by recovery and a new state of equilibrium. The measures included observation of laboratory parent-child interaction, interviews, diary reports, rating scales, and standardized tests.

Over the two years, the predicted crisis line of disorganization, recovery, reorganization, was evident in the divorced families. Parent-child interaction with each parent in the divorce group was characterized by fewer maturity demands on the children, less clear communication, less consistent discipline and lack of parental control over children. Other issues explored by the study suggest direction for future study. A key question remaining is, what happens after two years? Has the stabilizing process gone as far as it will or can it eventually match that of intact families?

Hetherington, Cox, and Cox have responded to criticism of earlier post-divorce studies with a very carefully planned project. Though replication and extension will solidify its value, this study gives a theoretically based, empirically sound insight into and discription of the post-divorce family system process. The study is longitudinal and uses controls. The measures are multiple and varied and can be checked against one another for supportive evidence. The discriptive quality of much of the data is a necessary step in a area where research results have been questionable and confusing with the added likelihood that results obtained five to ten years ago may be out-dated by changing social conditions.

R T Hetherington, E. M., Cox, M., & Cox, R. Divorced fathers. The Family Coordinator, October 1976, 25, 417-428.

The authors are here reporting on the same research and evidence as in their 1975 paper presented at the Society for Research and Development in Denver. This article is similar and less comprehensive with focus on the divorced father for the special fathering issue of the magazine. Added are statistics on the increased incidence of divorce involving children in the introduction and more discriptive information on the daily life of the divorced father.

As in the afore mentioned paper, the research presented fills a

valuable space in the literature. The data analyzed and reported is only part of that generated in the study. Look for further publications completing the analysis.

T Hill, R. Social stresses on the family: Generic features of families under stress. Social Casework, February 1958, 39, 139-150.

Hill discusses families as organizations which interact and transact with society. Using this framework, the author then relates ways in which families may be affected by crises or crisis-provoking events. Of great importance in this respect is the definition or meaning ascribed to a particular stressor by a particular family. From the previous discussion, Hill derives a formula to explain the interaction of these variables: A (the event) interacting with B (the family's crisis-meeting resource) interacting with C (the definition or meaning ascribed to the stressor event) produces X (the crisis). A family's crisis-proneness can be considered a result of an interaction of a multiplicity of factors. More specifically, crisis-proneness can be explained according to Hill, primarily by factors B and C in the equation. The author speaks of family adjustment to a crisis in terms of a roller-coaster model which follows a pattern of crisis→ disorganization → recovery → reorganization, with the representing the point at which disorganization causes a downhill movement, recovery leading to the upswing and reorganization being the crest of the hill beyond which is the stability of functioning. He notes in particular the effects of crises on pre-crisis role patterns and how role expectations may shift during later recovery and reorganization stages, eventuating in new patterns of organization and role performance.

Hill's writings are significantly related to the study of families be they in periods of stability, crisis, readjustment or reorganization, for all families must face stress of some nature. Patterns of family interaction, organization, and function may be critically examined in light of Hill's theory and thus it is an important component of the family theory literature. The roller-coaster crisis model may facilitate researchers' as well as professionals' understanding of the stress and crisis phenomena and how various families interact and react under stress and in crisis.

E Hilienbrand, E. Father absence in military families. In McCubbin et al. (Ed.), Families in the military system. New York: Sage Publications, 1976.

This study looked at the relationship between paternal absence and I.Q., classroom behavior, maternal dominance, parental identification and birth order. Sixth grade boys are used for the sample population.

The study found significant differences between first and later born boys for all of the stated variables. The author relates these differences to theories of birth order.

Because this is done with a military population, it is not easily generalizable to a civilian population, although it is not inconsistent with the major body of literature.

T,E 20 Hoffman, M. L. Father absence and conscience development. Developmental Psychology, 1971, 4, 400-406.

This study investigated the relationship between father absence and conscience development in children. The use of a father absent and a father present group controlled for sex, I.Q., and social class. The researchers measured seven moral attributes and overt aggression. All subjects were seventh grade white children. The data was based on structural and semi-projective items and ratings by parents, teachers, and peers.

Father absent boys obtained lower scores for all of the moral indices and significantly lower scores for internal moral judgment, maximum guilt following transgressions, acceptance of blame, moral values and rule conformity. They were also rated by teachers as being significantly more aggressive than the control group. No differences were found on these variables between the father absent and father present groups of girls.

This study did control for SES, although not for age of child at onset of absence or type of absence. One of the major criticisms in the literature is the lack of control for SES, which this study has taken into account. Yet, the results are consistent with many studies which have not controlled for SES. This raises the question of the importance of SES as an interacting variable. Although this particular study does raise this question, I do not wish to discount the importance of socio-economic status as a variable to be considered; only that research is needed to specifically speak to the question, "which variables should we look at when we are researching the effect of father absence on child development?"

T,E 20 Houston, S. Father absence and the development of sex role. Australian Journal of Social Issues, 1973, 8(8), 209-216.

This study investigated the differences in sex role development among father absent boys who were: male singletons, males in the four sibling status position and two-child families.

On three measures of sex role development, differences between the groups are shown. All father absent groups are shown to rank lower in sex role development than their father present peers.

This article introduces the variable of family constellation as having a possible effect on sex role development in father absent children. The researchers, however, did not control for several other variables which may have had intervening effects.

It is also important to point out that this article, along with many others, tends to measure sex role development as something quantifiable. In the interest of accuracy, a qualitative measure would be more appropriate and descriptive.

T E 20 Hunt, L. L., & Hunt, J. G. Race and the father-son connection: The conditional relevance of father absence for the orientations and identities of adolescent boys. Social Problems, 1975, 23(1), 34-52. [Sociological Abstracts, 1976, No. 7610186].

This article examines how structural circumstances condition the meaning of the father-son connection and the effects of father absence are investigated. The researchers looked for father present/father absent differences in personal identity and orientation towards success goals of early adulthood. The sample was composed of four hundred forty-five Black and white subjects from junior and senior high schools. All subjects were male. Variables measured were: (1) father absence; (2) SES; (3) orientation toward conventional achievement; and (4) personal identity (esteem and sex role).

The most significant result reported in this abstract was that white males of father absent families displayed the most withdrawal behavior from success goals while Black father absent males were not effected in their orientation to success goals, and in some cases, saw a slightly positive effect.

Methodologically, this study was well done. SES was controlled for and there was a large sample size. Unfortunately, the abstract did not elaborate on what role SES played in the results.

This study has important clinical implications for vocational counselors in offering insight to their clients' employment aspirations and perhaps offer some explanations for differential motivations towards adult success goals for clients from different familial and social class backgrounds.

A Ilgenfritz, M. P. Mothers on their own--Widows and divorcees. Marriage and Family Living, Feb. 1961, 23, 38-41.

The article summarizes the experiences and concerns of twelve women who participated in a six-week series of parent education discussions about one-parent families sponsored by a guidance center in Westchester County, New York. Specific content or structure was not delineated but group discussion topics were briefly presented. Among the issues confronted were fears of loneliness and aloneness, loss of self-esteem, and confusion about roles of women.

The practical problems of daily living, finances, time, and energy difficulties. In addition, there were concerns for their children mentioned, specifically, raising children in a fatherless home, giving special privileges to compensate for the child's loss of father, and sex education, especially where their sons were concerned. The author summarizes the effects of the group meetings as generally positive, noting the comfort the women gained in sharing their problems, greater self-confidence, and expression of decreased guilt feelings.

Given that the program's purpose was parent education and that the author felt it was of great benefit to the participants, it seems a more indepth discussion of the structure and goals was warranted. The article seems incomplete, lacking an objective component of education which was the stated purpose, and appears to fall more closely in line with a

a group therapy approch. The author interpretted the remarriage of five group members as an expression in this field, necessarily an indication of positive adjustment or of self-confidence. The sample was biased (self-initiated participation) and rather small to serve as a base for some of the generalizations made.

Issacs, S. Fatherless children. Childhood and after. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul: Chapter 12, 1948.

Unable to locate.

P Jones, E. Raising your children in a fatherless home. Glencoe: The Free Press, 1963.

Kelly, F. J., & Baer, D. J. Age of male delinquents when fathers left home and recidivism. Psychological Reports, 1969, 25, 1010.

Not able to locate.

T,E 20 Keller, P. A., & Murray, E. J. Imitative aggression with adult male and female models in father absent and father present Negro boys. Journal of Genetic Psychology, 1973, 122(19), 217-221.

This study investigated how male and female models effected aggression in father absent and father present Negro boys. Films were used to show aggressive behavior in adults. After viewing the films of Negro adult males and females displaying aggressive behavior, there were no differences found in imitative behaviors of father present and father absent groups. A control group was not shown the film and they, too, displayed no significant differences from the experimental group in aggressive behaviors.

This is one of the few studies which shows no difference between father absent children and father present children. It is valuable to the family researcher to note which variables are being measured in various studies and how they are being measured in order to account for the apparent discrepancy in findings between different studies. This study, for example, is inconsistent with the majority of literature on father absence, but does not have a methodology which is weaker than the majority of its counterparts.

E Kersey, K. C. The effects of male absence on impulsivity and self-control in preschool children. Dissertation Abstracts International, October 1973, 34(4-A), 1704.

E Koch, M. B. Anxiety in preschool children from broken homes. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, October 1961, 7, 225-232.

A group of preschool children consisting of eight boys and three girls between 43 and 67 months from divorced homes was compared with a group of seven boys and four girls drawn from two-parent families and matched on chronological age and IQ. Measures were Amen's projective test of anxiety, and home interviews of the mothers which

covered aspects of the following areas: persons in the home, eating, sleeping, toileting, dressing, discipline, fears, recreation, and home harmony. These areas were rated by judges on a scale from unfavorable to favorable.

The divorced home group scored significantly higher on the anxiety measure. Only one area of the rated interviews discriminated between the two groups. This was "number of persons". The author suggests that the judges rated the absence of one parent as more unfavorable. Based on the interview protocols, Koch says that, besides the absence of a father, the divorced homes were characterized by the insecurity of the mother, the uncertainty of the mother as to whether she is able to accept the responsibility for the child, and mothers' tendency to resent and reject her child. Poor child-rearing and home conditions were found generally in both groups.

Based as it is on such a small sample and using such loose measures, it is hard to be enthusiastic about this study. For example, it is not mentioned whether those who gave the anxiety test were "blind" as to the subject's family background. Also, conclusions made with regard to the mothers' insecurity and rejection based on interview protocols where the more quantitative ratings showed negligible differences should be made very tentatively. In general this study is not convincing.

C Krell, R. Problems of the single-parent family unit. Canadian Medical Association Journal, Nov. 4, 1972, 107, 867-872.

For the purposes of this paper, Krell defines the single-parent family as one formed through death, divorce, or separation, and including unwed mothers and single parent adopting. He confines himself to discussing the mother and children or child.

Being a child psychiatrist, the author presents several case reports to exemplify some of the unique problems experienced by individual families. His approach is one of supportive nonjudgment with the family and he provides a list of considerations for other physicians or psychiatrists meeting with single-parent families: (1) Would the child have demonstrated similar symptoms in a two-parent home? (2) Which of the problems would have appeared even under optimal circumstances? (3) Were the symptoms evident well before the divorce or death of the parent? Krell's concentration on symptomatology reflects his observations of frequent parental concern about a child's presenting symptoms in relation to the adult's single parentness. He accepts feelings of inadequacy in the parent and attempts to ease guilt feelings, acknowledging their effect on parent-child interaction and on the parent's own self-esteem. Krell notes that important variables to consider in looking at the single-parent family's problems include the child's age, sex, capacity for involvement, previous relationship with the absent parent, developmental level, present life situation, and the circumstances under which the single-parent family unit was formed.

Krell advocates an accepting approach to working with single-parent families and appears to be cognizant of the effects of stress, developmental level of the child, parental concerns and feelings, the

social milieu, and the interaction of a multiplicity of variables. His style thus represents a welcome departure from the medical model. The discussion of his conceptualization of the single-parent family and his management and counseling suggestions provides an excellent model for other physicians. He emphasizes that a child's symptoms may represent a system under stress and suggests trying to deal effectively with the underlying causes, when many physicians would treat the symptoms themselves. This discussion would be pertinent for other helping professionals was well as physicians.

T,E Ed 20 Kriesberg, L. Rearing children for educational achievement in fatherless families. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1967, 29(17), 288-301.

This study looks at the effect of father absence on educational achievement of the child through the intervening variable of the mother. That is: father absence → maternal behavior → educational achievement of child.

The researchers compared a group of married and husbandless mothers in order to assess how certain concomitents of fatherless families may be related to attitudes and behaviors relevant to their child's educational achievement.

The results show that husbandless mothers are generally more concerned about the educational achievement of their children, compared to married mothers. "Frequently lacking supportive environments, however, the conduct of husbandless mothers is often inappropriate and their aspirations for their children depressed." The analysis focuses particularly on neighborhood characteristics, income, and employment of the husbandless mothers and their children.

This is one of the most valuable studies done regarding father absence and academic achievement in children. Although variables such as type of father absence and age of child at onset of absence were not examined, SES was controlled for and was one of the main points of the study. The fact that father absence effects academic achievement of children through the intervening variable of the remaining parent is an important point which most research ignores. This research, however, not only dealt with the issue, but examined some poignant economic issues which play a crucial part in the behavior of the remaining single parent.

This study not only has valuable theoretical contributions as one of the few studies to take such a focus, but important clinical and policy applications for social service agencies regarding financial support of single parents.

Kriesberg, L., Bellin, S., & Safa, H. Fatherless families: Working papers. Syracuse: Youth Development Center, University of Syracuse, 1965.

Unable to locate.

E Landis, J. T. The trauma of children when parents divorce. Marriage and Family Living, Feb. 1960, 22, 7-13.

A questionnaire was given to 295 university students, all of whom were children of divorced parents. The questionnaire covered the following areas: the home as remembered prior to learning of the possibility of divorce; the immediate reaction to learning of the probable divorce; feelings of security, personal happiness and unhappiness following parents' divorce; ways "used" by one parent against the other during and after the divorce; relationships with mother and father before learning of possible divorce and after divorce; adjustments with subjects' friends and associates after divorce, and ways in which the parental divorce affected the subjects' attitudes towards marriage.

No differences were found according to birth order and number of sibs. Thirty-eight percent were too young to remember the home before and during the divorce. Some major findings were: that, for those old enough to remember, the trauma of the divorce and adjustment seemed positively related to how happy the pre-divorce homes were seen--it was less traumatic for those who recalled unhappy homes characterized by open parental conflict; that children, whether they were old enough to remember or not, tended to feel different from other children and resort to "face-saving devices" in the years after the divorce; younger children old enough to remember tended to recall less trauma than older children. Landis notes: "This stud . . . brings out rather clearly the unsoundness of grouping together and discussing all children of divorced homes as if they were a homogenous group affected in the same ways by the divorces of their parents."

This is a descriptive study based on retrospective data from a limited sample. In this sense the study does not advance theory particularly firmly. However, it does suggest the more rigorous examination of some potentially important variables for the child of divorce, specifically the nature of the pre-divorce family and the age of the child at the time of divorce. Unfortunately, these variables have not been studied or controlled for often since the time of this article.

E Landis, J. T. A comparison of children from divorced and non-divorced unhappy marriages. Family Life Coordinator, July 1962, 2, 61-65.

No annotation.

T,E Ed 20 Lessing, E. E., Margorin, S. W., & Nelson, D. WISC subtest and I.Q. score correlates of father absence. Journal of Genetic Psychology, 1970, 117(18, 181-195.

The purpose of this study was to look at the cognitive correlates of father absence to WISC subtest and I.Q. scores. The sample consisted of three hundred eleven males and one hundred twenty-two females who had been given the WISC as part of their routine diagnostic evaluation at a child guidance clinic. Those with a history of father absence (one hundred thirty-eight subjects) were associated with a lower per-

formance I.Q. and lower scores on Block Design and Object Assembly than the father present group, regardless of sex or social class. Working class father absent subjects also earned lower mean verbal and full scale I.Q. scores. Middle class subjects among the father present group earned a significantly higher mean I.Q. score than father absent children. Father absent children with a stepfather in the home did not differ from their father present peers.

The findings were discussed in terms of two hypotheses. One related the effects of father absence to a stress model while the other related it to loss of a male identification model.

This study has an important theoretical contribution as it shows that SES does account for some differences in I.Q. performance for father absent and father present children.

T,E 20 Lifshitz, M. Social differentiation and organization of the Rorschach in fatherless and two parented children. Journal of Clinical Psychology, 1975, 31(1), 126-130.

The purpose of this study was to "assess perceptual differentiation of meaningful social milieu and perceptual integration of neutral visual stimuli" among father absent children. The sample consisted of one hundred thirty-six, nine- to fourteen-year-old Israeli middle-class children, one-quarter of whom had lost their fathers in military action. The children were administered the Rorschach and the Bieri Test of Cognitive Complexity.

Father absent children did not show significant differences from father present children in measures of perceptual differentiation of their basic family unit or in the way that they organized the inkblots. Father present subjects showed a relationship between amount of social differentiation and degree of perceptual organization. Father absent children showed an inverse relationship between amount of social differentiation and perceptual organization.

There are several variables which this study does not control for, for example, age at onset of father absence and sibling distribution. There does not seem to be reasonable potential for the results of this study to have valuable clinical application.

E Longabaugh, R. Mother behavior as a variable moderating the effects of father-absence. Ethos, 1973, 1, 456-455.

Not able to locate on time.

T Machtlinger, V. Psychoanalytic theory: Preoedipal and oedipal phases with special reference to the father. In M. E. Lamb (Ed.), The role of the father in child development. New York: John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 1976. Pp. 277-305.

See Sex-Roles I-B.

Mackie, J. B. The father's influence on the intellectual level of black ghetto children. American Journal of Public Health, 1974, 64(6), 615-616.

Marsden, D. Mothers alone: Poverty and the fatherless family. London: Allen Lane, The Penguin Press, 1969.

Unable to locate.

20 Martindale, C. Father absence, psychopathology and poetic eminence. Psychological Reports, 1972, 31, 843-847.

This study explored the relationship between father absence, psychopathology and poetic eminence from a psycho-historical framework. Ratings of degree of psychopathology and of prabability of cross-sexual identification were made on temporarily stratified samples of forty-two eminent English and French poets.

Fifty-five percent of the subjects had life histories indicating some possibility of cross sex identity; of these, thirty percent came from father absent homes. Forty-eight percent exhibited some symptoms of psychopathology; of these, fifteen percent were rated as psychotic. Psychopathology and cross sex identity were highly correlated.

The clinical value of this study is low. To diagnose anyone as psychotic on the basis of historical data, other than official medical records, does not reflect scientific methodology. Classifications of subjects as being high on cross sex identity on the basis of historical data is also arrived at through dubious methodology. There is also no control group to compare the correlation data to nor are variables such as sibling distribution or SES controlled for.

The results of the study have little value to the clinician. The results would also have little contribution to the theoretical body of literature because of both poor methodology and lack of relevant application of their results to already existing hypotheses.

E Masingale, E. M. Father-absence as related to parental role-play behavior. Unpublished dissertation, Michigan State University, From Dissertation Abstracts International, 1971.

In his dissertation, the author compared parental role play behavior of black 5-year-old children from father-absent homes with those from father-present homes in two 10-minute simulated doll play family settings. N = 40. Role choice showed no significant differences. Comparison of independent group cells showed that females projected twice as many supportive acts as males and father-absent children were more supportive than those with fathers present.

Limited information from dissertation abstracts is not enough for analysis but probably is subject to the same questions as other studies using doll play. Does doll play indicate sex role identification? Does this have any definite implications for the child as an adult?

E McCord, J., McCord, W., & Thurber, E. Some effects of paternal absence on male children. Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology, 1962, 64, 361-369.

E McDermott, J. F., Jr. Parental divorce in early childhood. American Journal of Psychiatry, 1968, 124, 1424-1432.

T Meiss, M. L. The Oedipal problem of a fatherless child. The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child, 1952, 7, 216-229.

Meyer, M. The family without a father. Rhode Island Welfare. December 1955.

We could not locate this reference.

T 20 Mischel, W. Father absence and delay of gratification: Cross cultural comparisons. Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology, 1961, 63, 116-124.

The purpose of this study is to test an anthropological hypothesis concerning differences in preference for immediate, smaller gratification versus delayed larger gratification between two subcultures in the West Indies in father absent children.

Besides the anthropological theory being supported, a significant correlation between father absence and preference for immediate gratification was found in subjects between eight and nine years old, although the same correlation was not found in subjects between eleven and fourteen years of age.

Although SES, age at onset of father absence and sibling distribution were not considered, the attention given to age of the subjects as related to their preference for immediate versus delayed gratification has some interesting implications. One possible implication is that some effects of father absence pass with age or what other variables which are introduced with growth may neutralize some effects of father absence.

This study is valuable as a stimulant for further research regarding factors, such as age, which may neutralize effects of father absence.

C Mitchell, N. L. The significance of the loss of the father through death. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1964, 24, 279-280.

Did not locate.

T,E 20 Mitchell, D., & Wilson, W. Relationship of father absence to masculinity and popularity of delinquent boys. Psychological Reports, 1967, 20 (10, 15), 1173-1174.

The goal of this study is to examine the relationship of father absence to masculinity and popularity of delinquent boys. The masculinity-femininity scale of the MMPI was used to assess level of masculinity and a sociometric test on which the subjects expressed how much they liked each other by rating one another on a scale from one to nine.

Findings showed that absence of the true father from the home correlated significantly with peer rejection in a group of thirty-four delinquent boys. Neither the control group nor the father absent group showed the excessive masculinity sometimes reported to accompany both father absence and delinquency.

Although this study did not control for SES or sibling distribution, its findings regarding father absence and measures of masculinity are noteworthy. Mitchell and Wilson's article reports no significant correlation between excessive masculinity and father absence, which would seem to discount the explanation of compensatory masculinity in father absent males commonly found in the literature. This should stimulate further research regarding the compensatory masculinity theory.

T,E 20 Nelson, E. A., & Vangen, P. M. The impact of father absence upon heterosexual behaviors and social development of preadolescent girls in ghetto environments. Proceedings of the Annual Convention of the American Psychological Association, 1971, 6(1), 165-166. (Summary)

The purpose of Nelson's and Vangen's study is to examine the relationship between father absence and heterosexual behaviors of preadolescent girls in a ghetto environment. Their sample was comprised of Black and white eighth grade girls. Age at onset of father absence, sibling distribution, and SES were not controlled for. Father absence was also not concretely defined.

Results of the investigation found that "in ghetto environments, father absent females may be exposed and cognitively oriented towards sexually provocative and promiscuous experiences at an early age." The results further suggest that, "the father, in the ghetto environment, may have an important role in the development of sex related attitudes, values, and knowledge of young adolescent girls." This data is partially supported from a test called the "slang association measure", where subjects are asked to associate various slang words with what they mean to them. From this association, sexual attitudes are assessed.

Methodologically, this study ignores many crucial variables, one of which is SES. Further, it is value laden and judgmental regarding sexual attitudes. Such value laden biases obscure accurate reporting of data and findings.

Due to the methodological shortcomings of this study, it does not significantly contribute to the theoretical literature and, therefore, its clinical application should be viewed cautiously.

Neubauer, P. B. The one-parent child and his Oedipal development. The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child, 1960, 15, 286-310.

Could not locate.

T,E C 20 Nielson, L. J. Impact of permanent father loss on the intellectual level, vocational interests, personal adjustment and career plans of male war orphans. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Utah, 1971.

This study examines the difference in intellectual level, vocational interests, personal adjustment, and career plans of two hundred male war orphans in relation to the onset and duration of father absence.

Results showed that father absent males who had experienced early father absence without the entry of a stepfather were most inclined to be less assertive and less able to make career plans and follow through on them. Nielson hypothesizes that this difference is a function of the lack of a male model to identify with.

As stated previously, it is difficult to control for surrogate father models with military children. Therefore, it is uncertain whether entry of a stepfather can be viewed as a totally independent variable. It would also have been helpful if girls were included in the sample along with other relevant variables, such as SES and sibling distribution.

T,E 20 Oshman, H. P. Some effects of father absence upon the psychosocial development of male and female late adolescents: Theoretical and empirical considerations. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Texas at Austin, 1975.

This study evaluates the long-term effects of father absence on personality from an Eriksonian model of development. The sample included three hundred sixty-two college students, two hundred eighty-three who are father absent and seventy-nine who are father present. The two groups were matched for SES and number of older siblings. Dependent measures used were the Rasmussen Ego Identity Scale. Yufits Intimacy and Isolation Scales, Gough's Femininity Scale and the SAT.

The findings suggest that there is a beneficial effect for father absent children of gaining a surrogate father. Differential patterns of psychosocial deficit were observed depending on whether the absence was due to death or divorce.

Methodologically, this study is sound. It is one of the few studies which controls for SES. It is a valuable contribution to the body of theoretical literature in that it indicates that reason for father absence and stage of development are important variables.

E Parker, S., & Kleiner, R. J. Characteristics of Negro mothers in single-headed households. Journal of Marriage and the Family, November 1966, 28, 507-513.

Two groups of Black Philadelphia mothers were compared on prevalence of neurotic symptoms, educational status, self-esteem index scores, reference group behavior, and measures of goal-striving with regard to self and a hypothetical son. One group (N = 389) were raising school-age children and had a husband or husband substitute in the home. The women in the other group (N = 115) were also raising school-age children, but were either unmarried, divorced, or separated and there were no husband substitutes.

Results showed poorer psychological adjustment and less involvement in goals for self and a hypothetical son for the single mothers than the mothers in the "intact" group. The authors conclude: "These factors . . . suggest that . . . the mother's psychological adjustment and achievement-related attitudes exert a depressing influence on the

goal-striving behavior of her children. Thus the female-headed household, so widespread in the Negro community, may have some serious consequences for children raised in these homes."

This study has many flaws. The two groups are presumed equivalent for statistical purposes, but they are not controlled on income or occupational status of either fathers or mothers. Nor do they appear to control for age of the children, age of the mothers, number of children, or time since becoming a single parent. No data is presented from the fathers, the children or any other source, and mothers are asked only about a hypothetical son, as opposed to her real children, a hypothetical daughter, or a hypothetical (non-sex-typed) child. The difference in psychiatric symptoms is at the $p<.10$ level, not $p<.05$.

This critique does not exhaust the deficiencies of this study. The main point is not just that this is a flawed study, but that it is a dangerous one, since the authors point their conclusions toward social policy decisions as well as theory.

T 20 Pedersen, F. Relationships between father absence and emotional disturbance in male military dependents. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1966, 12, 321-331.

This article examined the relationships between father absence and emotional disturbance in male military dependents. Both an emotionally disturbed and a "normal" group were used for comparative purposes. Pedersen focused on the amount of father absence occurring during three developmental stages of the child: (1) early childhood (zero to three years); (2) Oedipal (three to five years); and (3) middle childhood (five to nine years). The amount of father absence was not significantly different between the groups. Pedersen theorizes that the subject's emotional disturbances were related to the interaction between father absence and maternal pathology.

T Pederson, F. A. Does research on children reared in father-absent families yield information on father influences? The Family Coordinator, Oct. 1976, 25, 459-464.

Pederson projects the opinion that studies looking at the differential developmental outcome on children of father-present and father-absent homes have served their usefulness. He accepts that research has shown that there are differences particularly in terms of cognitive development and sex role identification, and are related to age at loss. He also sees these differences as due to environmental influences. The author recognizes the methodological problems involved in much of the father-absent literature. The possible intervening variables are many and the specific components of fathers' behavior influencing child development cannot be teased out by looking at actual father-absent families. He finds fault with what he calls a deficit oriented approach.

After briefly summing up the literature on father-absence,

Pederson suggests several other focuses for research on the father's contribution. There is need for conceptual models to facilitate the study of father-child and husband-wife relationships and influences. Changing conceptions of sex roles must be considered. Influences must be seen not only as direct but as mediated through the mother. Father influences are not in reality unidirectional but rather bi-directional and multidirectional. Another point made is the necessity of recognizing ideosyncratic variations in family needs.

Perry, J. B., & Pfuhl, E. H. Jr. Adjustment of children in "solo" and "remarriage" homes. Marriage and Family Living, 1963, 25, 221-223.

E Rea, R. B. Childhood paternal loss and adult social maladjustments: A retrospective epidemiological study of differences in childhood experiences subsequent to the loss of a father between socially adjusted and socially maladjusted young adult males. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Tulane University, 1968.

This study attempted to show a relationship between adult social maladjustment and father absence in childhood. No significant correlation was found. The sample consisted of selective service registrants. The Midtown Manhattan Twenty Two Item Index was used to assess social adjustment status.

Several important variables were ignored, such as SES, sibling distribution, age at onset of father absence and type of father absence. Since no positive correlational data was obtained, the exclusion of these variables becomes academic, although, had they been included, the lack of supporting correlational data would have been a significant finding.

T Rose, V. L., & Price-Bonham, S. Divorce adjustment: A woman's problem? The Family Coordinator, July 1973, 22, 291-297.

Emphasis of the paper is on reviewing the literature and major findings relative to divorce adjustment in terms of its relationship to friendships, children, dating, and remarriage, with attention focused on divorcing spouse-parent rather than on the children.

Trauma and difficulty in adjusting to divorce is strongly influenced the adversary legal system and the ambiguous status of the divorced person, due to a lack of institutionalized norms. A divorcee's dating or other new activities (e.g., job) may assist in redefining his or her status. Remarriage is regarded by some authors and many divorcees as a form of adjustment, and may represent a solution to the ambiguous status of the divorced person. Effects of the remaining bond with the ex-spouse and Hunt's explanation of divorcees choosing to remain single are discussed in conjunction with adjustment as well.

Research suggestions included more work with male divorcees, investigations of divorcing and divorced couples, and replication of Goode's studies to assess possible attitude changes toward divorce and divorcees.

The authors' emphasis on the personal adjustment of the divorced spouse-parent is a significantly different approach to the study of divorce (though similar to that of Burgess) and relates importantly to the study of single parenthood, i.e., through the adult individual's eyes rather than from the usual standpoint of the children. The authors skillfully demonstrate traditional biases of the literature in discussing methodologies and theories utilized by Goode, Hunt, and other early researchers, thus obviating the need for continued research in the area of post-divorce adjustment focusing on the divorced spouse-parent.

T Rosenfeld, J. M., & Rosenstein, E. Towards a conceptual framework for the study of parent-absent families. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1973, 131-135.

After deciding there was a lack of comparable studies and irresponsible generalizations made from specific findings in the parent-absent literature, these Israeli researchers sought to conceptualize the issue as a way to encourage a more cohesive body of research. They mention Hill's book, Families Under Stress (1949) as a possible model which could have been but hadn't been used to examine the effects of parent-absence under conditions other than war. Their solution was to devise a mapping sentence as a guide to parent-absent research and theory. The sentence outline distinguishes between six aspects concerning the nature of the absence and two which relate to its effects.

The mapping sentence generated is as follows with underlined points having been broken down into several variables each in the original: "Parental absence (X) has a precipitating cause which involves a parent who is absent for a duration of time and with a certain frequency of absences during which the absence parent has certain amounts of contact as well as a certain kind of contact, all of these have an effect on the family with regard to certain areas."(p. 134) Intervening variables and methodology are mentioned as important considerations. But there is little expansion on these.

T 20 Santrock, J. W. Influence of onset and type of paternal absence on the first four Eriksonian developmental crises. Developmental Psychology, 1970, 3(18), 273-274.

This study tested the Eriksonian developmental model with respect to father absence. That is, if the father was absent in the zero to two year age group, the stress of paternal absence should most effect the child's development of trust and autonomy. It should also be the most detrimental period for father absence to occur since latter stages build on previous stages. The subjects were forty-five father absent and father present lower class white public school fifth grade males. They were divided up by reason for father absence.

Santrock's study revealed some support for this application of the Eriksonian developmental model.

This study would have been more valuable had it controlled for SES, sibling distribution and included girls in the sample. It does, however,

still contribute to the theoretical literature as not much has been done using developmental models to analyze the effect of father absence on child development.

T 20 Santrock, J. W. Relation to type and onset of father absence to cognitive development. Child Development, 1972, 43, 455-469.

The purpose of this study is to ascertain the relation of type and onset of father absence to cognitive development. Third and sixth grade IQ scores were compared for two hundred eighty-six father absent and fifty-seven father present, white, predominantly lower class boys and girls. Father absence was looked at in terms of: (1) age of the child at onset of absence; (2) type of absence; (3) presence of a stepfather versus no surrogate father. SES was controlled for and data was obtained by administering questionnaires to the children.

While father absence due to divorce, desertion, or separation had the most detrimental influence in the first two years of the child's life for both boys and girls, father absence due to death had the most negative effect for boys only, when it occurred between the ages of six and nine. Father absent boys consistently performed worse than father absent girls and father present boys. Remarriage of boys' mothers who were divorced from, deserted by or separated from their previous spouse, within the first five years of their son's life, neutralized the effects of father absence.

This study is methodologically strong. SES and a number of other variables are controlled for. The author's conclusion that the introduction of a father surroaget is helpful in the first five years is consistent with the Eriksonian developmental model.

T 20 Santrock, J. W. Father absence, perceived maternal behavior, and moral development in boys. Child Development, 1975, 46, 753-757.

In a study of 120 fifth and sixth grade West Virginia boys, Santrock hypothesized that father-absent boys would be found to be less morally developed than father-present boys; boys from widowed homes would be more morally advanced than those from divorced homes, and that perceived maternal affection and induction would be positively related to moral development while love withdrawal and power assertion would be negatively related. These boys were assessed on moral behavior (with self-criticism, resistance-to-temptation, altruism, reparation, and teacher-rating measures), moral judgment (on three Kohlberg items), and moral affect (using two guilt-maximizing story-completion items). Mothers' disciplining and affection styles were elicited from the subjects by asking about how their mothers dealt with the subjects' transgressions.

When IQ, SES, age, and sibling status were controlled, few differences were found between father-absent and father-present boys. Teachers reported father-absent boys as less morally advanced than father-present boys. In addition, teachers reported that sons of divorced women displayed more "social deviation", but they scored

higher in moral judgement than widow's sons, and, according to the subjects, divorced women used more power assertion in discipline than did widows. The author notes that " . . . the results from the present study should caution those who wish to make sweeping generalizations in regard to the relation of father absence to moral development."

T Schlesinger, B. The one parent family: Perspectives and annotated bibliography. Third edition. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1975.

A Schlesinger, B. The one-parent family in Canada: Some recent findings and recommendations. The Family Coordinator, July 1973, 22, 305-309.

Findings of two reports published in 1971 are presented and discussed by Schlesinger. The studies, one by Doris Guyatt at the Vanier Institute of the Family in Ottawa and one by the Canadian Council on Social Development, essentially validate each other and thus the findings are discussed concurrently. The greatest problem of Canadian single-parent families was found to be financial, followed in magnitude by their need to feel included in social and community living. Education was identified as a primary recommendation, to assist in remediating social isolation and unjust segregation of single-parent families. Integration of social agencies serving one and two-parent families was also suggested for this reason. Subsidized day care, family counseling, income support, premarital counseling, family life education programs in the schools, equal opportunities for women, and legal reform were also discussed and cited as important changes to consider. An additional need for standardization of information and data collection by all levels of government was presented by Guyatt.

However ideal the proposed social changes sound to the reader, the findings of the two studies document realistically the needs of the single-parent family and of the society in which it exists. Research and recommendations of this nature are necessary points of impetus for social change and the greatest value of the two studies, as well as Schlesinger's review of them, lies therein.

T 20 Schoolman, J. L. The relation of the development of masculinity to father absence in preadolescent boys. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Colorado, 1969.

This article studied the effect that father absence has on masculinity development in preadolescent boys. In a pilot study, observers agreed what constituted masculine, feminine, normal masculine and over masculine behavior.

The results showed father absent males to manifest greater aberrations in masculine behavior than father present boys. This conclusion is based on the observer's criteria from the pilot study. It was found that boys who were father absent due to divorce were more effected than boys who were father absent due to death. No significant relationship was found to be attached to age of the child at onset of absence or

duration of absence.

SES was not controlled for in this study, along with other relevant variables. Also, the indicator used to assess masculine behavior is biased, both by the researcher's values and their inherent bias concerning the knowledge of the study and the theory they wish to prove. Because of the methodological faults, this study is not as helpful as it might have been.

T Sprey, J. The study of single parenthood: Some methodological considerations. The Family Life Coordinator, January-April 1967, 16, 29-34.

T 20 Steigman, A. W. Father absence during early childhood and antisocial behavior. Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology, 1966, 71, 71-74.

Parson's theory that "difficulties in achieving adequate sex role identification is a significant source of male antisocial behavior" has led this article to the hypothesis that father absence during early childhood will be related to antisocial acting out.

A comparison of fifty-one father absent male medical students to an anonymously administered questionnaire with eighty-nine comparable father present students supports this hypothesis.

SES was not controlled for in this study. Being that father absent families tend to decrease in socioeconomic status after onset of absence, this would seem to be a relevant variable to investigate.

A Stein, R. L. The economic status of families headed by women. Monthly Labor Review, December 1970, 93, 3-10.

Stein, an economist with the Bureau of Labor Statistics, reviews some of the handicaps suffered by women which have influenced their bleak economic outlook as heads of households, including lack of sufficient education or training, irregular work histories, sex and racial discrimination in hiring, and difficulties in finding satisfactory child care arrangements. The author discusses briefly the complexity of the relationship between income and family stability, including the question of causal direction and the difficulty of quantifying these interactions. He attends to comparative incomes of one and two-parent families and of black and white families. Noted also are the differential effects of extent of employment and weekly earnings of women on replacement of the family income to the extent that it existed before the loss of the breadwinner. In conclusion, Stein reviews several programs designed to upgrade employability of women and addresses associated controversial issues, e.g., public assistance.

The article is mainly a historical account of contributing factors to the poor economic status of female-headed families. The factual approach is useful in broadening awareness about the life situation of most female-headed households however addresses itself only tangentially to the social issues.

Steinberg, M. A. Children's coping behaviors related to father absence. Unpublished dissertation, University of Texas-Austin.

T 20 Stolorow, R. D., & Lachmann, F. M. Early object loss and denial: Developmental considerations. Psychoanalytic Quarterly, 1975, 44(4), 596-611. (Psychological Abstracts, October 1976, No. 5826)

This article is a psychoanalytic case history of a woman whose father was sent to a concentration camp when she was four years old and did not return. The authors suggest that the case shows certain aspects of libidinal and ego development, especially as it relates to losing one's father just prior to the Oedipal phase and on the defensive use of denial. Further effects of her father's absence are seen in the development of her self-image, sexual identity and superego.

This article is valuable to those with a psychoanalytic framework but does not fit in the body of literature coming from a social learning theory framework.

C Strean, H. S. Treatment of mothers and sons in the absence of the father. Social Work, 1961, 6, 29-36.

In reviewing psychoanalytic and clinical literature, Strean accepts a Freudian prognosis and interpretation for sons of divorced parents who are living with their mothers. Mainly such boys are seen to have severe, emotional and sexual identification problems, with homosexuality considered a serious threat. The mothers play their part by being possessive and seductive. After three years of clinical case studies, the author sees the mother-son relationship as a powerful and pathological symbiosis and very resistent to treatment. His treatment recommendation concern one male therapist working with each separately.

The fathers' influence is really only approached as a lack resulting in a pathological mother-child relationship. Though it sheds no light on fathering, the article is an interesting example of a type of clinical Freudian approach which is prominant in the early father-absent literature. Methodologically it is important to note that the sample is a very biased one.

T 20 Stolorow, R. D., & Lachmann, F. M. Early object loss and denial: Developmental considerations. Psychoanalytic Quarterly, 1975, 44(4), 596-611. (Psychological Abstracts, October 1976, no. 5826).

This article is a psychoanalytic case history of a woman whose father was sent to a concentration camp when she was four years old and did not return. The authors suggest that the case shows certain aspects of libidinal and ego development, especially as it relates to losing one's father just prior to the Oedipal phase and on the defensive use of denial. Further effects of her father's absence are seen in the development of her self-image, sexual identity and superego.

This article is valuable to those with a psychoanalytic framework

but does not fit in the body of literature coming from a social learning theory framework.

C Strean, H. S. Treatment of mothers and sons in the absence of the father. Social Work, 1961, 6, 29-36.

In reviewing psychoanalytic and clinical literature, Strean accepts a Freudian prognosis and interpretation for sons of divorced parents who are living with their mothers. Mainly such boys are seen to have severe, emotional and sexual identification problems, with homosexuality considered a serious threat. The mothers play their part by being possessive and seductive. After three years of clinical case studies, the author sees the mother-son relationship as a powerful and pathological symbiosis and very resistent to treatment. His treatment recommendation concern one male therapist working with each separately.

The fathers' influence is really only approached as a lack resulting in a pathological mother-child relationship. Though it sheds no light on fathering, the article is an interesting example of a type of clinical Freudian approach which is prominant in the early father-absent literature. Methodologically it is important to note that the sample is a very biased one.

T Suedfeld, P. Paternal absence and overseas success of Peace Corps volunteers.
20 Journal of Consulting Psychology, 1967, 31, 424-425.

This study found that paternal absence during childhood differentiated significantly between successful and unsuccessful Peace Corps volunteers. In two independent samples the proportion of individuals from fatherless homes was significantly greater among unsuccessful volunteers.

This article does not control for SES, type of absence, sibling distribution, etc. It also does not offer an explanation as to the significance of its results, that is, what does the correlation between father absence and unsuccessful Peace Corps volunteers mean in terms of behavior, self-concept, etc.?

T Sutten-Smith, B., Rosenberg, B. G., & Landy, F. Father-absence effects in
E families of different sibling compositions. Child Development, 1968,
20 39, 1213-1221.

This study compared the effects of father absence for varying lengths of time with the effects of father presence. The effects were measured by scores on the ACE college entrance exam. Comparisons were made for only children and for children in the two and three child families.

In general, father absence had a detrimental effect in all groups with the most negative effect during the early and middle years. Boys without brothers were found to be more effected than boys with brothers, girls with a younger brother were more effected than other girls and only girls were more effected than only boys. These results seem to

suggest that possession of a same sex sibling may, in part, modify the effects of father absence.

Although SES is not controlled for, this study has taken a close look at sibling distribution and has good potential for complementing the theoretical literature. It is especially interesting that the results found only girls to be more effected than only boys; this would seem inconsistent with much of the literature.

Tennyson, R. A. Family structure and delinquent behavior. In M. W. Klein (Ed.), Juvenile gangs in context. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1967. Pp. 57-69.

No annotation.

E Thomes, M. M. Children with absent fathers. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1968, 30, 89-96.

The experimental groups was composed of caucasian children ages 9 to 11 who were legitimate offspring of fathers who were absent because of divorce, desertion, or a separation of at least two years. All mothers were on ADC. An equivalent control group was formed using these mothers' referrals of two-parent families. SES was estimated for both groups using the main lifetime vocation and education of the fathers. Children's concept of parental roles, feelings and attitudes toward family members, peer relationships, and self-concept were assessed on instruments and interviews given both children and mothers.

Results showed many similarities and few differences. The experimenter had the impression that in father-present homes, the father's relationship with his children was not warm or close, and suggested that perhaps for low SES families there is not much difference between having the father there or not. What differences there were between the groups were between the girls and not the boys.

This is an adequate but not outstanding study. It shares with many similar studies the features of using a low SES sample, taking data from mothers and children but not fathers, and finding few, if any, important differences between father-present and father-absent children.

C Tooley, K. Antisocial behavior and social alienation post divorce: The "Man of the House" and his mother. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, January 1976, 46(1), 33-42.

The author has seen at her outpatient clinic many single mothers with sons aged four to seven presenting with similar problems. These problems have to do with aggressive, noncompliant, domineering and "hyperactive" behavior of the son. Rather than interpreting this as indicative of psychopathic character disorder, Tooley forwards the view that this antisocial behavior is a counterphobic and counter-dependent defense to the mother's own feelings of being overwhelmed by and unable

to manage reality problems precipitated by single-parent family living. Specifically are cited mothers' inability to use appropriate aggression in dealing with the often condescending and hostile (to the single mother) outside world and to limit aggression of children within the family.

Tooley advocates problem-oriented counseling with mothers in these families with the goal of helping them become more competent both in and out of the family. She reports that as the mothers experience themselves as more confident and strong the behavior problems of the sons decrease.

This article moves from the base of psychoanalytic developmental theory to an interactional view of the antisocial behavior of young boys in single parent homes, which takes into account intrapersonal, interactional, and societal factors. Data is clinical rather than empirical; case studies are given.

The clinical intervention suggested is congruent with the author's theoretical position that this problem situation springs from interpersonal, intrafamilial, and societal sources.

T 20 Trunnell, T. L. The absent father's children's emotional disturbances. Archives of General Psychiatry, 1968, 9(14), 180-188.

This study takes a psychoanalytic view of father absence and its effect on children's emotional disturbances. The researchers used the medical charts of children under eighteen who were seen diagnostically during a twenty month period at Mt. Zion Hospital. Out of two hundred fifty-nine children, one hundred nineteen were father absent.

Three hypotheses were extracted from the data: (1) "Effect of paternal absence on normal child development are reflected by correlations in the form and severity of emotional disturbances manifested. The younger the child at the onset of father absence and the longer the absence, the greater the psychopathology." Sex and age of the child were also found to be correlated. (2) "Psychological efforts at restoring the missing father result in identifiable behavior patterns in the child." (3) "Paternal absence is never a long psychotoxic agent. Multiple factors contribute to the final clinical picture and clusters of poorly defined paternal deprivation syndromes begin to converge from the data."

The most impressive remark in this study is the author's statement, "Multiple factors contribute to the final clinical picture . . . " Although a psychoanalytic approach and social learning theory approach may disagree as to what those multiple factors are, it is significant that both approaches recognize the importance of intervening variables. Psychoanalytic studies, such as this, tend, however, not to see factors such as SES as a relevant intervening variable, which could be viewed as a shortcoming of such an approach.

T 20 Trunnell, T. A review of studies of the psychosocial significance of the absent father. In McCubbin et al., Families in the military system. New York: Sage Publications, 1976.

This review of literature concluded that even transient father absence can seriously effect psychological development of the child. Psychoanalytic case studies are cited relating father absence to the psychological difficulties in the child or adult. Trunnell sees father absence as related to a "decrease in masculinity and an increase in immaturity and aggressiveness in the child."

This, being one of the few reviews of literature on father absence, is valuable for that reason alone. It does not, however, reflect a social learning theory perspective but more of a psychoanalytic perspective.

E Wallenstein, N. Character and personality of children from broken house. New York: Teachers College, Columbia University Monograph No. 721, 1937.

C E Wallerstein, J. S., & Kelly, J. B. The effects of parental divorce: The adolescent experience. In E. J. Anthony & C. Koupernik (Eds.), The child in his family: Children at psychiatric risk III. New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1974. Pp. 479-505.

The authors' purpose was to use a grant in a community health center to study divorce as an individual psychological experience and find the range of impact and responses for each individual family member and for the various relationships within the family. They were interested in the response of a nonclinical population to the crisis of divorce. Another purpose was to develop clinical prevention and intervention for children of specific age groupings and their parents. The assumption was that divorce is a crisis involving disorganization and reorganization over time, providing each family member with a personal crisis with potential for growth and/or emotional disruption.

Basically the result is a longitudinal clinical study of a "nonclinical" population. The sample included 60 families with 131 children between the ages of three and nineteen who were involved in the divorce decision and the period following. The subjects were seen by clinicians trained in work with children and parents. They were seen weekly during an initial six week period with follow-up interviews at twelve and eighteen months. A four-year follow-up was also planned. In addition to clinical evaluation and information obtained from each family member, schools, and parents provided information on the children and children on parents.

E C Wallerstein, J. S., & Kelly, J. B. The effects of parental divorce: Experiences of the preschool child. Journal of the American Academy of Child Psychiatry, 1975, 14(4), 600-616.

There were thirty-four preschool children from twenty-seven families available for study. These were further divided because each subgroup by age was found to have developmental, age-specific responses, There were four boys and five girls in the 2-1/2 to 3-1/4 year old group, five boys and six girls in the 3-3/4 to 4-3/4 year old group.

and, nine boys and five girls in the 5-6 year old group.

The youngest group was characterized by regression, fretfulness, cognitive bewilderment, heightened aggression, and a pervasive enduring neediness. The middle group showed loss in terms of self-esteem and often felt personally responsible that one parent had left. In the oldest group many were able to keep their developmental stride by finding some gratification outside the home. For those who had difficulty, it was often in the area of resolving the Oedipal conflicts with a disruption in learning. Nearly half were found to have deteriorated in psychological functioning one year later.

C E Wallerstein, J. S., & Kelly, J. B. The effects of parental divorce: Experiences of the child in early latency. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1976, 46(1), 20-32.

The fifty-three children who were between the ages of seven and ten, formed a distinctive group with their own developmental differences in perceptual, cognitive, affective, and defense configurations. This group was further divided into a younger and older latency group. The seven and eight year olds were more immobilized by their suffering and more vulnerable to regression. There were fourteen boys and twelve girls in this group. These children were distinctly characterized by the depth of their sadness and grieving. Most of them were also very frightened and experienced fantasies of insatiable hunger. Some also worried that they had caused the divorce and almost all wished for reconciliation. After one year, 50% had improved their psychological functioning or maintained their positive developmental strides. Twenty-three percent were judged to have deteriorated. Those outcomes appeared to be related to the nature of the post divorce family structure.

E C Wallerstein, J. S., & Kelly, J. B. The effects of parental divorce: Experiences of the child in later latency. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, April 1976, 46, 256-269.

The children in this part of the Marin County study were 31 children between nine and ten from 21 families. Believing this to be a time when children look to peers and others outside the family the authors were particularly interested in whether divorce kept the children's attention rivited on the family instead. These children were mostly poised and under control on the first visits. Only later did the various layers of response become evident. Shame was seen for the first time in this age group. They often coped with their pain with increased and organized activity. They were mostly very angry and judgmental of their parents. Also distinct to this group was a variety of somatic symptoms. Half of the children also suffered a decline in school performance, but most of them had resumed former achievement levels by the one year follow-up. They were often caught up in taking sides with parents. Many also demonstrated a heightened ability to emphathize. Most symptoms had subsided by one year later for half the group with anger and bitterness lingering the longest. Another half

gave evidence of being severely in conflict and depressive at the first follow-up.

C Wallerstein, J. S., & Kelly, J. B. Divorce counseling: A community service for families in the midst of divorce. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1977, 47(1), 4-22.

Drawing on crisis intervention theory and the literature on loss and mourning, the authors developed their own program in response to the families they were coming to know in the divorce study. They developed a child-centered, preventive service for divorcing families. Though not reviewed in detail here, since the material is not directly related to fathering alone, this article is recommended as an excellent piece of work integrating the theoretical, clinical, research, and practical approaches and bringing them to bear on a crisis which is becoming common to families in our society.

C Wallerstein, J. S., & Kelly, J. B. Brief interventions with children in divorcing families. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1977, 47(1), 23-37.

A continuation of the prevention strategies developed out of the Marin County divorce studies, this article concentrates on those interventions for children of various ages. It includes assessment, education, and clinical suggestions for those working in the area of children from divorcing families.

T E 20 Wasserman, H. L. Father absent and father present lower class Negro families: A comparative study of family functioning. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Brandeis University, 1968.

The purpose of this study was to compare father absent with father present family functioning in lower class Negro families. Fifty-five intact families and sixty-two father absent families in two public housing developments and having at least one son between ten and fifteen years old made up the sample. Data was collected from mothers using precoded and open-ended questions. Father absence was defined on the basis of housing authority records and by the creation of "pure" groups, of which only families with natural fathers present during the most recent three year period were considered intact. Data on school performance for that same three-year period was obtained from school records. An instrumental-expressive scheme was developed scoring responses to eighty items considering the following properties: values, decision making; tak performance and solidarity.

The presence or absence of the father was revealed as a continuous rather than a discreet variable. Father absence versus father presence in the home did not differentiate boys in school achievement and women raised with intact families were more likely to be living in one.

E T Wohlford, P., Santrock, J. W., Berger, S. C., & Liberman, D. Older brothers' influence on sex-typed, aggressive, and dependent behavior in father-absent children. Developmental Psychology, 1971, 4(2), 124-134.

The question of sibling influence in case of father-absence was examined in respect to the variables: masculinity-femininity, aggression and dependency. After reviewing the literature it was proposed that one possible father surrogate could be an older brother. This little studied relationship would not fit Freudian theory, but it would follow from Kohlberg's cognitive learning theory which says that once a child becomes aware of sex differences and his/her own sex, he/she looks for models of appropriate behavior.

In the study, sixty-six impoverished preschool girls and boys were the subjects. Fathers had been absent for a minimum of two years. There were 33 girls and 33 boys. Twenty-two had no older brother. Twenty-two had both older sisters and older brothers and 22 had older brothers only. Doll play interviews and maternal interviews were the measures used.

Overall major sex differences were found. The boys were more aggressive but not more independent and father-absent boys and girls were clearly differentiated in appropriate sex role performances. The sibling groups showed no effect on sex typing. The presence of older brothers, but not sisters, offset the father-absent effects on aggression and dependency in both boys and girls, making them more like children from father-present families.

The two measures, doll play and maternal interview, often didn't yield the same information regarding the variables. The use of doll play as an instrument has been criticized as a questionable measure of child attitudes and behavior. S.E.S. was controlled by choice of an all poverty level sample. S.E.S. is not confounding, but results are not generalizable to other groups. As is frequently the case some sample cells were quite small, and replication on a larger scale is necessary in such a new and complex area of study. There was not an older sister only group. This seems to be an important lack since statements were made about the relative influence of brothers and sisters. The authors themselves point out that the measures used may not have reflected the variables intended and that intervening variables such as family dynamics may be very significant.

C Wylie, H. L., & Delgado, R. A. A pattern of mother-son relationship involving the absence of the father. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, July 1959, XXIX, 644-649.

Starting from the premise that boys growing up without fathers have extreme difficulty, the authors looked at 20 clinical cases of hostile, aggressive fatherless boys. The article presents one case to illustrate with commentary supported from all 20 cases. Little is said about the father's influence or his absence except as a necessary condition for the particular mother-son relationship which was seen as characteristic in these cases. The other mention of the father has to

do with perceptions of him. The dynamics are described like this, "The fathers are looked upon by the mothers as being bad; the boys are viewed as being like their fathers, and assume some of their father's role in the home." (p. 649) These cases are seen as difficult to treat with no solutions offered.

Though this article may describe possible dynamics in a particular, small sample, finding similarities, it tells us nothing about fathering. Similar histories may produce normally developing sons, and similar problems may develop in father-present boys. In addition to using a strictly clinical population the theory and diagnosis are not even supported with evidence of successful treatment.

Wynn, M. Fatherless families. London: Michael Joseph, 1964.

C Wynn, M. Family policy. Harmondsworth, Middlesex, England: Penguin Books, Ltd., 1972.

T,E Ed,C 20 Zold, A. C. The effects of father absence during childhood on later adjustment: A long term follow-up. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Minnesota, 1975.

This study was a follow-up of eighty white father absent subjects seen at the University of Minnesota Medical Center for psychiatric reasons in adolescence. Two groups of father present subjects were used as a control. One was random while the other was matched for age seen, SES in adolescence, residence, birthdate and sex. Father absence was defined as permanent separation from biological father for at least two years prior to treatment at the center. Subjects who were maternally separated were excluded from the study.

The study found few statistically significant differences among the fifty dependent variables examined. Some of those variables were heterosexual adjustment, antisocial behavior, achievement related activities, psychological status, etc. Differences are more common in adolescence than in adulthood. Differences in adulthood seem to be connected with variables related to professional judgment. One of the few strong differences found was the greater incidence and duration of institutionalization among the father absent group. The study also found that early father absent males and late father absent females tend to adapt less effectively than late father absent males and early father absent females. The results also indicated that a surrogate father not make a significant difference in adjustment of father absent subjects.

Methodologically, this study is very well done. It controls for SES and many other variables. It also bases its conclusions on a long-term follow-up, something that other studies have not done. This approach enables us to see long-term effects of father absence. Due to the extremely strong methodology and valuable theoretical conclusions, it makes an important contribution to theoretical literature and has many aspects which can be helpful to the clinician. The author also presents his data in a non-judgmental fashion which further enhances its accuracy.

Additional references, tangentially related to the topic:

Adler, L. M. The relationship of marital status to incidence and recovery from mental illness. Social Forces, 1953, 32, 185-194.

Anspach, D. F. Kinship and divorce. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1976, 38, 323-330.

Anthony, E. J. Children at risk from divorce: A review. In E. J. Anthony & C. Koupernik (Eds.), The child in his family: Children at psychiatric risk (Vo. 3). New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1974.

Baggett, A. T., Jr. The effect of early loss of father upon the personality of boys and girls in late adolescence. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Northern Texas State University, 1966.

Barclay One-parent family: Further notes. New York Times Magazine, January 26, 1958, pp. 48+.

Barringer, K. D. Self-perception of the quality of adjustment of single parents in divorce participating in Parents Without Partners organizations. Dissertation Abstracts International, 1974, 34(7-A), 4446-4447.

Bell, R. R. Lower class Negro mothers and their children. Integrated Education, December-January 1964-65, 11, 23-27.

Bell, R. R. The one-parent mother in the Negro lower class. Social Forces, May 1965, 43, 493-501.

Bernstein, N. R. Problems of children with divorced parents. Feelings, April 1964, 6, 1-4.

Biller, H. B. A note on father absence and masculine development in young, lower-class Negro and white boys. Child Development, 1968, 39, 1003-1006.

Biller, H. B. Father absence and the personality development of the male child. Developmental Psychology, 1970, 2, 181-201.

Biller, H. B. Factors in family relationships: Syndromes of paternal deprivation in man. In J. M. Cullen (Eds.), Experimental behavior: A basis for the study of mental disturbance. New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1974.

Biller, H. B. Paternal deprivation, cognitive functioning, and the feminized classroom. In A. David (Ed.), Child personality and psychopathology: Current topics (Vol. 1). New York: John Wiley and Sons, 1974.

Biller, H. B., & Bahm, R. M. Father absence, perceived maternal behavior, and masculinity of self-concept among junior high school boys. Developmental Psychology, 1971, 4, 178-181.

Biller, H. B., & Meredith, D. Father power. New York: Doubleday, 1975.

Billingsley, A., & Giovannoni, J. One parent family. In R. Morris (Ed.), Encyclopedia of social work (Vol. 1). New York: National Association of Social Workers. Pp. 362-363.

Bohannen, P. Divorce and after. Garden City: Doubleday-Anchor, 1964.

Bronfenbrenner, U. The origins of alienation. Scientific American, 1974, 231, 53-61.

Burchinal, L. G. Characteristics of adolescents from broken, unbroken, and reconstituted families. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1964, 26, 44-51.

Carter, H., & Glick, P. C. Marriage and divorce: A social and economic study. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1970.

Catholic Family Service of Calgary The one parent family. Ottawa: Canadian Conference on the Family, 1964.

Dell, G. A. Child guidance and one-parent families: A survey of children attending Glasgow child guidance clinics. Scottish Educational Studies, 1974.

Despert, J. L. The fatherless family. Child Study, Summer 1957, 24, 22-28.

Despert, J. L. Children of divorce. Garden City, NY: Doubleday and Co., Inc.

English, O. S., & Foster, C. T. Fathers are parents too. New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1951.

English, O. S. The psychological role of the father in the family. Social Casework, 1954, 35, 323-329.

Family Service Association The significance of the father. New York: Family Service Association of America, 1959.

Freudenthal, K. A class for the "only-parents". Understanding the child, 1956, 25.

Freudenthal, K. Problems of the one-parent family. Social Work, 1959, 4.

Freudenthal, K. The only parent. The Single Parent, 1965, 8, 10-12.

Friedman, R. Some characteristics of families of children with psychogenic pain. Journal of Clinical Child Psychology, Fall 1975, 4, 21-23.

Gavai, J. E. Single parents and the sexual revolution. The Single Parent, July 1967, 10, 4-6 & 9.

Gavai, J. E. Sex and the single parent. Sexology, October 1967, 34, 148-150.

Glueck, S., & Glueck, E. Family environment and delinquency. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1962.

Goode, W. Problems in post-divorce adjustment. American Sociological Review, June 1949, 14, 394-401.

Grollman, E. A. Talking about divorce: A dialogue between parent and child. Boston: Beacon Press.

Grollman, E. A. Explaining divorce to children. Boston, Beacon Press, 1969.

Heritage, J. G., & Daniels, J. L. Post-divorce adjustment. Journal of Family Counseling, 1974, 2, 44-49.

Hetherington, E. M. Effects of paternal absence on sex-typed behaviors in Negro and white preadolescent males. Journal of Personality and Social Psychology, 1966, 4, 87-91.

Hetherington, E. M., & Deur, J. L. The effects of father absence on child development. Young Children, 1971, 26, 233-248.

Hozman, T. L., & Froiland, D. J. Families in divorce: A proposed model for counseling the children. The Family Coordinator, July 1976, 25, 271-275.

Hunt, L., & Hunt, J. Boys without fathers: It's tougher for white teens. Paper presented at the American Sociological Association Meetings, San Francisco, August 1975.

Hunt, M. M. The world of the formerly married. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1966.

Iammarino, N. K. Relationship between death anxiety and demographic variables. Psychological Reports, August 1975, 37, 262+.

Kaplan, H. B., & Pokorny, A. D. Self-derogation and childhood broken home. Journal of Marriage and the Family, May 1971, 33, 328-337.

Kaseman, C. M. The single parent family. Perspectives in Psychiatric Care, July-September 1974, 12, 113-118.

Klein, T. The fathers' book. New York: William Morris, 1968.

Kotelchuck, M. The nature of the child's tie to his father. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Harvard University, 1972.

Lachar, D. The families of psychiatric children: A review. Catalog of Selected Documents in Psychiatry, Summer 1975, 5, 286.

Lamberts, M. B. Family structure, child mental patients, and length of hospitalization. Dissertation Abstracts International, January 1974, 34, 4433-4434.

Landis, P. H. The broken home in teenage adjustments. Washington Experimental Station (call #542), (Now Washington State University), 1953.

Langer, M. Learning to live as a widow. New York: Julian Messner, 1957.

Law and Contemporary Problems Children of divorced parents, Summer 1944, 10, entire issue.

Leader, A. L. Family therapy for divorced fathers and others out of the home. Social Casework, 1973, 54, 13-19.

Lerner, S. H. Effects of desertion on family life. Social Casework, January 1954, 35, 3-8.

Lewis, R. L. The unmarried parent and community resources. Child Welfare, 1968, 47, 487-614.

Madow, L., & Sherman, E. H. Incidence and analysis of the broken family in the background of neurosis. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, July 1947, 17, 521-528.

Marris, P. Widows and their families. London: Routledge and Kega Paul, 1958.

McDermott, J. F. Divorce and its psychiatric sequelae in children. Archives of General Psychiatry, Noyember 1970, 23, 416-420.

McKenny Divorce: A selected annotated bibliography.

Merrill-Palmer Quarterly The influence of the father in the family setting. April 1965, 11.

Mischel, A. Father absence and delay of gratification. Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology, 1961, 62, 116-124.

Mitchell, D., & Wilson, W. Relationship of father absence to masculinity and popularity of delinquent boys. Psychological Reports, 1967, 20, 1173-1174.

Monahan, T. P. The trend in broken homes among delinquent children. Marriage and Family Living, November 1957, 4, 362-365.

Monahan, T. P. Broken homes by age of delinquent children. Journal of Social Psychology, 1960, 51, 387-397.

Morris, J. D., & Prescott, M. R. Transition groups: An approach to dealing with post-partnership anguish. The Family Coordinator, July 1975, 24, 325-330.

Nye, F. I., & Bernardo, F. M. Emerging conceptual frameworks in family analysis. New York: MacMillan, 1966.

O'Hara, R. C. The divorcee. Derby, Conn.: Monarch Book, 1962.

Ostrovsky, E. S. Children without men. New York: Collier Books, 1962.

Pastoral Psychology The widow, the divorcee, and the single woman. December 1967, 18, entire issue.

Peck, B. B. Psychotherapy with fragmented families. Family Therapy, 1974, 1, 27-42.

Peck, B. B. Psychotherapy with disrupted families. Journal of Contemporary Psychotherapy, Winter 1975, 7, 60-66.

Peche, J. E. Counseling parents in divorce. In F. Delliquardri (Ed.); Helping the family in urban society, 1963.

Plant, J. S. The psychiatrist views children of divorced parents. Law and Contemporary Problems, Summer 1944, 10, 807-818.

Pollack, O. The broken family. N. E. Cohen (Ed.), Social work and social problems. New York: National Association of Social Workers, 1964. Pp. 321-339.

Popenoe, P. Single parenthood. Family Life, September 1965, 25, 1-3.

Reinhard, D. W. The reaction of adolescent boys and girls to the divorce of their parents. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Pennsylvania, 1971.

Rose, L. The broken home and male delinquency. In M. Wolfgang, N. Johnson, & L. Savitz (Eds.), The sociology of crime and delinquency. New York: John Wiley, 1970.

Rosenberg, M. The broken family and the adolescent self-image. In J. Heiss (Ed.), Family roles and interaction: An anthology. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1958. Pp. 516-532.

Rubin, R. H. Adult male absence and the self-attitudes of black children. Child Study Journal, 1974, 4, 33-45.

Santrock, J. W. Relation of type and onset of father absence to cognitive development. Child Development, 1972, 43, 455-469.

Scanzoni, J. A social system analysis of dissolved and existing marriages. Joural of Marriage and the Family, August 1968, 30, 452-461.

Schlesinger, B. The multi-problem family: A review and annotated bibliography. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1965.

Schlesinger, B. The one-parent family: Recent literature. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1966, 28, 103-109. (a)

Schlesinger, B. The one-parent family: An overview. Family Life Coordinator, October 1966, 15, 133-138. (b)

Schlesinger, B. Parents without partners. Canadian Welfare, November 1966, 42, 231-236. (c)

Schlesinger, B. Australia's council for the single mother and her child. Children Today, 1973, 2, 26-27, 36.

Silvern, S. B., & Yawkey, T. D. Divorce: Some effects on and teaching strategies for young children. Paper written at the University of Wisconsin-Madison.

Smith, P. M. Broken homes and juvenile delinquency. Sociology and Social Research, May-June 1955, 39, 307-311.

Spicer, J. W., & Hampe, G. D. Kinship interaction after divorce. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1975, 37, 113-119.

Spicey, J. Family disorganization: Toward a conceptual clarification. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1966, 28, 398-406.

Sterne, Richard S. Delinquent conduct and broken homes. New Haven: College and University Press, 1965.

Tanner, V. L. Selected Social Work concepts for Public Welfare Workers. Washington, DC: Bureau of Family Services Welfare Administration, 1964.

Thorman, G. Broken homes. New York: Public Affairs Committee, 1958.

Toby, J. The differential impact of family disorganization. American Sociological Review, October 1957, 22, 505-512.

Toomim, M. K. The child of divorce. In R. E. Hardy & J. G. Cull (Eds.), Therapeutic needs of the family: Problems, descriptions, and therapeutic approaches. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas, 1974.

Tuckman, J., & Regan, R. Intactness of home and behavioral problems in children. Journal of Child Psychology and Psychiatry, 1966, 7, 225-233.

Vincent, C. E. The loss of parents and psychosomatic illness. Sociology and Social Research, July-August 1955, 39, 404-408.

Vincent, C. E. Familia spongia: The adaptive function. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1966, 28, 29-36.

Wargotz, H. The adjustment of children in motherless homes. The Single Parent, May-June 1968, 11, 4-10.

Wattenberg, B. J., & Scammon, R. M. This USA: An unexpected family portrait of 194, 067, and 296 Americans drawn from the census. Garden City: Doubleday, 1965.

Westman, J. C., Cline, D. W., Swift, W. J., Kramer, D. A. The role of child psychiatry in divorce. Archives of General Psychiatry, November 1970, 23, 416-420.

Westman, J. C., & Cline, D. W. Divorce. Family Law Quarterly, March 1971, 5, 10+.

Whitaker, C., & Miller, M. H. A re-evaluation of "psychiatric help" when divorce impends, 1969.

Williw, C. V. The relative contribution of family status and economic status to juvenile delinquency. Social Problems, 1967, 14, 326-335.

Wilson, J. C., Altrop, L. B., & Buffaloe, W. J. Parental bereavement in childhood: MMPI profiles in a depressed population. Journal of Psychiatry, 1967, 113, 761-764.

Wolf, A., & Stein, L. The one parent family. New York: Public Affairs Committee and the Child Study Association of America.

Woolley, P. Creative survival for single mothers. Millbrae, CA: Celestial Arts, 1975.

P Akioka, L. How to (help him) succeed in business (which takes some trying). Wisconsin Alumnus, August-September 1970, 22-24.

In this article Ms. Akioka interviewed Mrs. Alma Baron who taught a course, offered by University of Wisconsin Extension, for wives of executives.

Although recognizing the fact that there are wives who are assets and wives who are liabilities to their husband's careers, Mrs. Baron designed the course to emphasize "mutual understanding and communication" between the husband and wife.

Ms. Akioka requested Mrs. Baron to "boil down" the course into a list of the faults and virtues of the wife that effects her husband's career. The main body of the article consists of the nine points that Mrs. Baron concentrates on as she teaches the course.

Although the course claims to emphasize mutual understanding and communication it is very obvious that it is the wife who is being asked to do the understanding.

P Berkwitt, G. Corporate wives: The third party. Dun's Review, August 1972, 100, 60-62.

George Berkwitt claims to see a growing revolt among corporate wives. He finds evidence for this in the fact that wives are demanding more to say about decisions effecting their lives. He gives several reasons for this revolt on the part of the wives.

This change on the part of some of the corporate wives is being reflected, to a slight extent, by some changes among some of the companies.

Mr. Berkwitt does not mention how he researched this question. He did, however, quote an executive, executive's wives, one head of an executive search firm, educators, and an officer of a consultant firm.

E Boss, P., & McCubbin, H. I. The corporate wife: Coping patterns in response to executive-husband absence in the family system. ~~Submitted, 1977~~. Family Process, 1979.

The purpose of this study was to investigate ways by which family members, in intact families, cope with father/husband absence.

The authors defined coping as a strategy for dealing with stress, and acknowledged that there was stress present in families where there is repeated absence of a member. They reviewed the literature and pointed out the small amount of work that has been done on this subject, especially for the corporate family.

The authors constructed an instrument, and utilized a list of 84 behavior items in order to isolate coping factors. The method of selection of subjects, and manner of administration of the questionnaire is described in the article. The 21 coping factors that were found by the authors are described.

After reading many descriotive articles and having to guess at the methods they used in their research, this clearly delineated article was a pleasure to read. I heartily concur with the authors when they

Boss, P. G. A clarification of the concept of psychological father presence in families experiencing ambiguity of boundary. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1977, 141-151.

state that the isolation of the coping factors is unique to research literature on the concept of coping. The discussion and conclusion sections of the article are of particular interest because they explained past investigations and pointed the way for future investigations, with their rewards and pitfalls.

P Burger, N. H. The executive's wife. London: Collier-MacMillan Ltd., 1968.

Mrs. Burger, the wife of an executive, clearly states her purpose for writing this book in her final chapter (13), titled (For men only) Memo to: Mr. Executive. In this memo she tells him that this book is addressed to his wife so that it may help her to help him. She also tells Mr. Executive that there are two people in a marriage and that he must do his part so there is equality in the marriage. Both of these threads run throughout the book, with greater emphasis on the first idea. She touches on many diverse subjects about the executive wife in her book.

Ms. Burger tells us that in order to write this book, requested by the publishers, she interviewed wives of executives in every region of the country. She does not, however, tell us how this interviewing was done, or how many wives she talked to. The book is clearly slanted to making the lives of the executives easier. Ms. Burger expects the wives to do this, even at some cost to themselves. This seems somewhat surprising from the wife of an executive when you consider that she has very definitely carved out a life for herself.

P Fendrock, J. Goals in conflict. American Management Association, 1969.

John Fendrock's purpose in writing this book was to awaken managers to the one sided (business only) lives that they live. With this purpose in mind he looks at many aspects of the manager in his job and the community. Although the entire book has been scanned for material pertinent to the subject of the father/husband psychologically absent, this review will concentrate on chapters 8 and 9 because they are more pertinent to the subject.

While making some blatent generalizations and assumptions Mr. Fendrock, in chapter 8, details reasons for the business man-wife marriage and what happens in and to it before and after the children arrive. After a step by step tracing of the degeneration of this marriage, Mr. Fendrock claims that this degeneration should not have occured. He then offers more simplistic suggestions, to the couple, explaining how they should have lived their lives. He also suggests ways in which this marriage may be rejuvenated.

In chapter 9, where the father/manager's relationship with his child is described, another black, simplistic, and overgeneralized picture is painted. When Mr. Fendrock finishes describing how the relationship reaches the dead state it is in, he relates what should have been done by the father to form a good father-child relationship. To be fair to Mr. Fendrock it must be mentioned that he gives some

suggestions on how to change this black picture.

Mr. Fendrock, in his preface, states that his book was the "product of much exploration into the thinking of many managers, their wives and children". However, as in most descriptive studies, there is no indication how, where, or when this exploration took place.

P Industry Week, Eternal triangle--man, wife, and work. January, 1971, 168(25), 29-33.

The author of this article states that some of the more astute companies are beginning to feel that wives can be of help in improving their husband's performance in his job. They are becoming aware of the amount of influence the wife has. Several educators who conduct seminars for wives alone, or husbands and wives were interviewed. They explained what went on in the seminars, the overwhelming response to the seminars, and thepositive effects they had on all concerned.

Included in this article were some complaints voiced by the wives concerning the effects business had on their family lives. Some of the problems the husbands had, because the wives didn't understand their business difficulties were also mentioned.

Again, as in so many of the articles reviewed, we see something being done more to smooth the way of the corporate husband, not to help in the problems caused by the husband psychologically absent, but so business will not be harmed.

P Kimmelman, B. Executive wives--The need for a positive company-sponsored approach. California Management Review, Spring 1969, 11, 7-10.

In this article Barry Kimmelman discusses ways that companies can develop an approach to deal with the problems of corporate wives. Recognizing the obvious importance of the executive's wife to his life and career, and the cost to the company of training an executive, Kimmelman states that such programs can't be left to chance, but must be planned (obviously for the good of the company).

He pinpoints ways in which positive programs can be developed to insure help from the wives to assist the husband in his career and prevent the company from losing their investment in him. He cites several companies who have developed such programs.

P Maccoby, M. The gamesman. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1976.

Mr. Maccoby has written this book to draw a picture of today's corporate leader. In order to do this he, and some of his students, conducted sociopsychoanalytic interviews with 250 managers from twelve major companies throughout the country. He defines sociopsychoanalytic interviews as an attempt to explore areas of the inner life. He learned this method while studying with Erich Fromm.

Mr. Maccoby identifies four types of corporate leaders and devotes a chapter to each of these types. Although there is some mention, within the individual chapters, of the problems for wives, children,

and the executive caused by the fact that the executive is psychologically absent, most of these problems are found in chapter 7. It is in this chapter that more reference is made to the fact that the characteristics of the heart, which are essential for good relationships, run contrary to those developed in corporate life.

Although Mr. Maccoby admits to seeing a desire for change (less emphasis on things of the head and more on things of the heart) on the part of some of the corporate men he has interviewed, he appears to be pressimistic that this will truly take place. Lest other careerists believe themselves incapable of performing some of the actions they see in corporate leaders, Maccoby hastens to add, that as far as he is able to see, other careerists in this country share some of the characteristics of the corporate leader.

Mr. Maccoby has used an interperative questionnaire and the Rorschach test as a jumping off place for his interviews. As the title of the questionnaire suggests it is an interperative study. The book, though soul chilling, is provocative and well worth reading for anyone interested in the picture of the corporate husband/father, who is psychologically absent.

P Murray, T. Why executives' children drink. Dun's Review, 1975, 106, 60-62, 64.

Mr. Murray paints a frightening picture of the alcoholism found in the teen-age children of executives throughout the country. Quoting authorities, he talks of a survey in San Mateo County, Calif., and of a trend toward alcoholism developing in New York City and Westchester county, as well as other parts of the country.

Mr. Murray quotes these experts on such areas as the cause of alcoholism among teenagers, how to identify a teenage alcoholic, what can be done to handle the problem, and what is being done to remedy the problem.

P Packard, V. The pyramid climbers. New York: Fawcett World Library, 1962.

Vance Packard's purpose in writing this book about the modern (50's-60's) executive was to try to understand what it took to be a successful executive. In order to do this he described many facets of executives and the corporation.

Although all of his many topics are interesting and necessary in order to get the whole picture of the corporate executive, the most important chapters for those interested in the problems that wives of husbands psychologically absent face, are chapter 5, and chapter 20. In chapter 5 Mr. Packard discusses the screening done by the companies of the wife, and the ways in which the wife can be a detraction to her

executive husband. In chapter 20 the executive's private life is discussed. The topic of executive mobility is emphasized, and the stress this causes the family is mentioned. Something else dealt with here, and not too often seen before, is the expectations by the company of the role the executive is expected to play in the community and politics. This expectation compounds the burdens on the executive's time. Mr. Packard also defines the social life the executive is expected to have, and the effects of this on his family.

As has been stated, these latter two chapters deal most directly with the topic of interest. However, it seems difficult to pull these from the context of the book and concentrate only on them if a picture of the corporate executive psychologically absent is desired. The pressures and expectations on the executive and his family leads to deeper understanding of the problem.

In order to write this book, Vance Packard talked with executive recruiters, executive coaches, officials of psychological counseling and testing firms, psychiatrists, educators, realtors, and the executives themselves. Above and beyond interviewing these people, Packard participated in some tests that executives take. All of these undertakings have led to a precise look at the topic under study.

P Schoonmaker, A. Anxiety and the executive. American Management Association, 1969.

The principal purpose of this book is to help the executive solve the problem of anxiety. It touches on some causes and effects of anxiety, and ways to solve this problem. Although important, some of the chapters do not deal directly with the father psychologically absent. In order to stay more closely in tune with that subject only two chapters will (Chapter 4 and 10) be annotated.

Mr. Schoonmaker, who counsels executives on their career problems, states that it is necessary for man to build firm roots in order to overcome the anxiety caused by his aloneness. He believes this is difficult for modern executives. In chapter 4 he discusses the price modern executives pay for their mobility, as well as other aspects of their careers. He also speaks of the stress on the executive family caused by this rootlessness. In chapter 10 Schoonmaker discusses the seriousness of the problem of alcoholism and the executive. He believes this is partly caused by the anxiety the executive feels in social gatherings.

As indicated by the paucity of this review, there is very little pertinent material in these chapters. They do serve to re-emphasize othermaterial which discusses the problem for the executive of the rootlessness in his life. They also add to the findings about alcoholism as a coping pattern in the executive's life.

P Seidenberg, Dr. Robt. Dear Mr. Success: Consider your wife. Wall Street Journal, February 7, 1972.

This article written for the Wall Street Journal by Dr. Seidenberg brought a vast amount of hopeful response on the part of executive wives. They seemed to feel that somebody understood and was sympathetic to their plight. The interest shown in and the response to this letter led Dr. Seidenberg to enlarge upon the theme and write a book on the subject.

In this article, Dr. Seidenberg discusses the difficulties corporate wives face when their husband's job causes the family to move. Dr. Seidenberg uses a case history of illustrate the loss of identity that many of these wives suffer. He also raises some very provocative questions.

P Corporate Wives--Corporate Casualties? Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1975.

In this book, as in the article cited above, Dr. Seidenberg emphasizes the problems, caused by mobility, of the wives and children of corporate executives. Making liberal use of case histories from his own practice, Dr. Seidenberg talks about those problems that are inherent in the frequent moves. He also cites some instances when moving is the healthy solution to various difficult situations.

Dr. Seidenberg also propounds that corporations should pay more attention to human values--that they have a moral responsibility to do so. He then discusses what some companies have done about this problem.

He mentions loneliness as it pertains to both the husband and wife, emphasizing that although it is definitely a problem for the executive, it is a much greater one for his wife. He also spends some time considering the double sex standard as it applies to the corporate husband and wife. He then looks at some of the problems inherent in being a woman executive. Dr. Seidenberg concludes with warnings, predictions, and some solutions for the problems of corporate wives.

Although Dr. Seidenberg has suggested some ways that executives and their wives cope with their difficult positions most of these have been a negative way to cope, i.e., alcoholism and infidelity.

Dr. Seidenberg, in writing this book, was wise when he stated that he found no villians except the "existential traps into which so many of us unwittingly and helplessly fall". This was one of the strengths of this book, as was the burden of guilt lifted from many a corporate wife. The greatest weakness seemed to be the inordinate amount of blame placed on mobility as the cause of the difficulties of the corporate wife and child. Surely there are many other problems inherent in the situation.

P Whyte, W. H. Jr. The wives of management. Fortune, October 1951, 86-88, 204, 206-208, 210, 213.

Wm. Whyte in 1951 did a series of 8 articles on what "determines the flow of communication" within business. After examining what he refers to as the caste and social system of the corporation, he turned to what he considers one of the keys of the system,i.e., the wife. He then wrote two articles on her place in the system. The article cited

above was the seventh of the series, and the first of the two articles dealing with the wife of the executive.

In order to develop this wifely picture, Mr. Whyte and other Fortune correspondents conducted interviews with 230 executives. Drawing on the information he learned from those being interviewed, Whyte stated that corporations are beginning to pay more attention to the wife, for the good of the corporation. Management believes this is necessary so that they can shape the attitudes of the wife. This shaping would result in the wife being aware that the husband's total energies belong to the job.

The main emphasis of this article was on what the wives see their role to be. Although the wives of junior management were thought by the corporation to be very good corporate wives there is some mention of conflict. Mr. Whyte states that this conflict, noticed by him, would be denied by the wives. There is however some mention of some of the problems encountered by the wives.

P The corporation and the wife. Fortune, November 1951, 75, 109-111, 150, 152, 155-156, 158.

This second article, on corporation wives, by Whyte focused on what the corporation is doing to insure that the executives they hire have satisfactory (to the corporation) wives.

The screening before hiring, and the screening that takes place before promotions is discussed. However, this screening is not considered enough to insure the wives cooperation. The corporation must also sell the wife in the company and integrate her into the company. The manner in which several companies do this is reviewed. This discussion includes not only the integration that is planned by the companies, but some that takes place because of the nature of the job.

In this article, Mr. Whyte mentions the difficulties caused by the mobility that is inherent in the husband's jobs. He gives some suggestions that companies can do to alleviate some of these problems.

Mr. Whyte concludes with the thesis that the wives like corporate life, and gives some explanations for the reasons behind this.

Although it appears that all is calm on the corporate front, Mr. Whyte does not concur with this appearance and writes a footnote expressing his concern with the conformity he finds.

P Wille, L. Life at the top: Executive wives yearn for accomplishment. Chicago Daily News (May 16-17), 1970.

In this article, Lois Wille reports the results of a study called "The well placed wife". The purpose of this study, which was sponsored by Northwestern University's Center for Urban Affairs and John Paisios, [illegible] a management consultant firm, was to ascertain how the

Husbands of the wives interviewed are senior and middle level business executives, senior and middle faculty members, and scientists and engineers.

The strongest finding evolved from the study appears to be a feeling of dissatisfaction on the part of the wives because their happiness is so strongly identified with their husband's, rather than their own, success. It was also noticed that a large percentage of the wives, except for those of senior executives, hold jobs, or wish they did.

Although it was difficult to determine from the article, the study appeared to consist of a questionnaire, as well as some interpretation of the wives' answers. There is also no clear indication how one qualified to be one of the top Chicago area business or professional men, and therefore a husband of a study participant.

P Wyse, L. Mrs. success. Ladies Home Journal, October 1970, 87, 50, 156-158; November 1970, 58, 61, 63.

These articles are excerpts from a book written by Mrs. Wyse, titled Mrs. Success. The book was written because Mrs. Wyse wanted to know and understand Mrs. Success. The husbands of Mrs. Wyse's Mrs. Success earn $100,000 per year.

A portrait of Mrs. Success has emerged. Where she lives and what she does with her life are some of the parts of the picture. Mrs. Wyse also talks about the problems (principal one loneliness), frustrations, boredoms, and resentments of Mrs. Success. Eight ways in which Mrs. Success copes with these problems are identified by Mrs. Wyse.

Mrs. Wyse also gives a brief picture of the children of Mr. and Mrs. Success, and the picture emerges of Mr. Success as a father psychologically absent.

In order to paint her portrait of Mrs. Success, Lois Wyse interviewed psychologists, pediatricians, children of Mr. and Mrs. Success, Mrs. Success, ex-Mrs. Successes and a few Mr. Successes. She also sent a 15-page questionnaire to 400 wives of Mr. Success. Although not a statistical study, which Mrs. Wyse herself states, it is a descriptive study that confirms many of the other studies that have been reviewed. Incidentally, Mrs. Wyse, herself is a Mrs. Success.

Nation's Business. Your business is her business, May 1970, 58, 72-74, 76.

An anonymous survey (not only written anonymously and answered anonymously, but also anonymous because the author never cited a reference for the survey, or indicated how one qualified to be a top executive) of wives of 117 top business executives was the source of the material quoted in this article.

The picture presented in this article was of wives who didn't find their husband's jobs hard on them, in fact of wives who found mean-

However, the author takes even this accomplishment away from the wives by suggesting this wifely feeling is produced by the husband's manipulatory skill. He, the husband, is so capable that he is able to plant this idea in his wife's mind.

The article concludes with six patronizing ideas on how the husbands may get their wives to be of assistance to them in developing their careers.

P The Courant, Hartford, Conn. Executive wife image changes as she enters liberation era, October 1971, 10.

The material in this article has been researched to determine what changes, if any, have taken place in the attitudes and actions of corporate wives, executives, and the corporations concerning the wife's place in the corporate picture.

Interviews have been conducted with wives of executives, executive recruiters, personnel directors, and educators. The majority of those interviewed claim to see changes taking place in the wife, the husband as executive, and corporations.

This is an article written for a newspaper, if it were written for a journal it would be criticized for its lack of clarity in several areas. There is no indication of how the interviews were conducted. Was a questionnaire used? Were they personal or telephone interviews? Who did the interviewing? And was it done by one or more interviewers? Were there any questions asked that were left unanswered? Was this a mail survey, and if so who responded? Are some other points that could be raised? None of these questions are answered. There is also no indication of the sample size. Eleven people were quoted, but was the sample size larger?

As was stated this was a newspaper article, and the newspaper isn't required to adhere to the stringent rules of journal publication. On the other hand, perhaps it is time to demand more accuracy from our press, to at least demand a clear statement of what has been done and how it has been done so that we are able to have confidence in what we read.

P U.S. News and World Report, An expert talks about--problems of "executive wives". Feb. 18, 1974, 76, 80-83.

In this article, Dr. Robert Seidenberg, psychiatrist and psychoanalyst, participates in a question and answer interview about executive wives and their problems.

Dr. Seidenberg, who acknowledges that he formerly believed that the executive wives he attended were people with inferior personalities, places great emphasis on the mobility found in the corporate structure, as the main cause of the stress in the lives of executive wives. He not only sees this as a problem for the wife, but for the children as well.

In this article, Dr. Seidenberg also discusses some of the negative and positive ways that wives cope with corporate mobility and with their lack of self-identity.

P Forman, L. Getting it together: The divorced mother's guide. New York: Berkley Medallion Books, 1974.

The author, a divorced woman with two children, has written a very positive, easily readable, light account of her life--both the mistakes and the positive changes resulting from them. The nature of the test can best be described in her own words: "I come not to bury the single mother, nor to praise you for being a revered creature, all the more worthy of pity and pedestals because you're going it alone. I won't label you a PWP but a PERSON. If you're expecting a book applauding your martyrdom or reaffirming your cop-out that if-you-didn't-have-the-children-life-would-be-better, I'm afraid you won't find it here (p. 8)."

Ms. Forman addresses primarily those parents who have the emotional fortitude necessary to create an environment both the remaining parent and children find satisfactory--and even "enlightening". She discusses those issues found in books with similar titles--finances, self-concept, changes in existing relationships, ways to form new relationships, feelings of children and parent, etc., and offers helpful advice. She does not mention a "cure-all" such as remarriage, long-term therapy, etc., but sees the power as being with the individual.

The drawback to her book is, in my opinion, that it is geared so to the single parent who would have to be quite "stable" emotionally from the onset of the transition period. Ms. Forman suggests therapy for those who don't seem to be able to "get it together", but even that suggestion is presented lightly and with some humor. No, sympathy she does not offer, and in her introduction she stated she would not . . . consequently, the book is enjoyable, full of helpful suggestions, but in no way empathetic. The emphasis is that anyone can carve a life for themselves and their children which is rewarding and fulfilling. . . my personal feeling is that some cannot and/or will not. Some need a great deal of help, and would find this book offering very little . . . and would perhaps find the light-hearted nature of it a bit unreal.

P Geddes, J. B. How to parent alone. New York: The Seabury Press, 1974.

Ms. Geddes, a single parent herself, has written a book, with a slight religious basis, regarding primarily "parent care". It is her opinion that many books have been written on child care for the single parents, but few have been written about the care of the parents.

The author emphasizes the need for single parents to get to know themselves. Her book is positive, and useful for both the single male and female in custody of children. She addresses her comment primarily to the single parent in his or her late twenties with young children--as statistics have shown that the average single parent is in this age group, is an urbanite, and will remarry someday.

Her book is often humorous, emphasizes healthy self-acceptance and awareness, but does also offer advice to those who are having difficulty

with self-concept. She sees professional help as necessary for those who find adjustment exceptionally difficult.

P Gordon, M. The nuclear family in crisis: The search for an alternative. New York: Harper and Row Publishers, 1972.

The book is composed of articles written by various authors dealing with: I. Historical Perspectives on Communal Families; II. The Family in the Kibbutz; III. The Family in Socialist and Welfare Nations; and IV. The Family and the Current Communal Movement.

The book primarily discusses communal living arrangements, but I have included it is my study because: a. Gordon does address families in which a parent may be absent; and b. alternatives to the nuclear family concept--alternatives which he feels are viable, and ones which I think single parents would benefit from considering, or at least being exposed to.

The author in his introduction deals with the preferential treatment of men in the work force, and the societal role of women as housewife and mother--two factors which often prevent a woman from working outside the home, and in turn, often forcing her to remain in a marital nuclear system which may not be satisfying.

The author, by the selection of articles presented, seems to argue that only in communal environments, where the domestic responsibilities of the women, as well as the labor responsibilities of men, can be distributed in the "community", will men and women be emancipated and offensive sex roles abolished. His primary concern around this issue seems to be with offensive sex roles regarded of women. He also points out pros and cons of communal arrangements--emphasizing those qualities which have made for "successful" communal living environments in the past, as well as the present.

While none of the articles deal with "Father-Absent" families perse, I think the book is useful for the single parent as it provides a look at a viable option to living alone with children. The historical and informational articles are fascinating and repeatedly emphasize the current isolation of the nuclear family, as well as the single family, and the advantages involved in adults living and sharing with other adults and children--advantages for both the adults and the children.

P Hope, K., & Young, N. (Eds.) MOMMA: The sourcebook for single mothers. New York and Scarborough, Ontario: New American Library, 1976.

MOMMA is an organization, which also publishes a newsletter, for single mothers. This book is a collection of writings by some of the members of the organization.

With the notable exception of a few of the contributors, which I will mention later, the primary emphasis of the writings is oppression, with men (and on many occasions, society at large) being the oppressor. Most of the contributions were negative, emphasizing the worst possible situations, and were not aimed at problem solving. Most of the contributors obviously have had little, if any, writing experience...they

simply had a tale to tell, and most of those tales regarded transgressions against them made by men in their lives--usually their ex-husbands or lovers, often their male therapists or legal advisors. Most articles were written by women who have been, and currently are, deeply entrenched in devastatingly "lower class" life styles, and bitterness and hostility prevailed. Men were the enemies, the ones responsible for all that has made their lives as unliveable as they are--women seldom experiencing themselves as being responsible for any portion of that misery. The title page describes the essays as ones involving risk, sharing, and discovery. Statements such as the following, do indeed provide a "sharing" of opinion, but in my opinion discovery and risk are lacking--if you are out to "discover" that all men are bastards, then perhaps this book will add fuel to your fire. However, I do not find the discoveries helpful, and I find the bitterness to be depressing and extremely self-defeating (and defeating for "people-kind" on the whole).

P Howe, L. K. (Ed.) The future of the family. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1972.

Ms. Howe has edited a book of articles, several of which deal with the single parent. The articles presented that discuss this topic are as follows: "Divorced Mothers as a Political Force" by Gail Sheehy; and "Changing Family Styles: One Role, Two Roles, Shared Roles" by Jessie Bernard.

Other articles are included which are related to single-parenthood, but do not deal with it specifically, for example: "Who Cares for America's Children" by Urie Bronfenbrenner; "Child Rearing in Communes" by Bennett M. Berger, Bruce M. Hackett, and R. Mervyn Millar; "Training Woman to Know Her Place" by Sandra L. Bem and Daryl J. Bem; and "Child-Care Communities: Units for Better Urban Living" by John R. Platt.

Ms. Howe has included articles written by well informed authors related to their area of expertise. I found all of the contributions to be well written, thought provoking, and seemingly knowledgeable.

Gail Sheehy presents the following statistics (applicable at the time of writing--1969) which outline the change in family structure occurring in our society:

> "One American family in ten is now headed by a woman. Eight million children under the age of eighteen are being cared for by single women. The median income of these families... is $4,000. Compare this with the median income of $11,600 for families headed by men. Only 9% of families headed by women in 1969 had incomes over $10,000. After liberalization of the divorce law, New York State's 14,454 divorces in 1968 leaped in 1969 to 26,462. On the national level, total families increased by 14 percent in the last decade, while female-headed families multiplied by 24 percent (p. 56)."

Ms. Sheehy expresses concern about the current anti-abortion laws existant in many states; about retractions of Medicaid payments for abortions; about the welfare laws which do not provide adequately for single parents; and about bills to repeal alimony.

Jessie Bernard, in her discussion of "The One Role Ideology" and "The Two-Role Ideology" addressed the issues related to societal pressures which often force a woman to "stay in the home" unless there is absolutely no other source of income. She praises the late President John Kennedy's efforts in his establishment of the "Commission on the Status of Women", and discusses developments which followed this initial effort. Interestingly, she mentioned that a study of AFDC mothers showed that four-fifths of this group stated their preference to working even if they had incomes of their own.

Howe's collection of essays provide useful information for the single parent in many areas. None of the articles deal with psychological issues facing the single parent, consequently the reader will complete the book with the knowledge that he/she has further facts regarding the future of the family in our society. However the book is in no way designed to be "therapeutic", and is also aimed at the more "sophisticated" reader.

P Jones, E. Raising your child in a fatherless home. London: Collier-Macmillan Ltd. The Free Press of Glencoe, 1963.

This book is based on Freudian principles, and is divided into three sections: You, Your Child, You and Your Child. The first section thoroughly discusses a method of self-analysis aimed at sophisticated readers with a psychoanalytic background. Unfortunately, I do not feel it would be useful to anyone else.

P Klein, C. The single parent experience. New York: Walker Publishers, 1973.

Klein addressed her writings primarily to the single parent who have chosen this role, i.e., the single person (never having been married) who adopts a child which he/she will raise alone.

Klein is aware of the difficulties regarding single-parenting. She emphasizes, for those who are in the process of decision regarding this role, that the job of parenting requires strengths, both emotional and physical, and that reasonably well adjusted, self-confident people, as opposed to lonely and frustrated people, are better suited to the demands.

Klein discusses: (a) reactions of relatives and friends regarding your ability to raise a child or children without a man, and the "unprotected" feelings that may result from these reactions; (b) childcare issues such as cost, availability, age, guilt, etc.; (c) other financial concerns; (d) the needs of the parent and the feelings of being "imposing" when these needs are recognized and dealt with; (e) the increase of fatigue due to the extra work and responsibility; (f) loneliness; (g) the necessity of giving up some of the spontaniety you may have experienced as a person living entirely alone, or even when there was a father present in the home for childcare in the evenings, etc.; (h) alternative living arrangements; (j) reactions of pity or envy from friends; and (k) considerations regarding remarriage stating that it is not the answer for everyone.

The book is very positively written. The author doesn't approach single-parenthood from a position of pity, nor does she recommend and assume remarriage as a "cure-all". She offers sound advice regarding self-identity, and ways of dealing with this new role.

P LeMasters, E. E. Parents in modern America. Illinois: The Dorsey Press, 1975.

LeMasters originally wrote his book in 1970, and it was revised for the fourth time in 1975. I consider the title of "Modern America" to be slightly deceiving, as very little of the book is devoted to alternative parenting styles. The book is quite general, traditional, historical, informational in a general style, and is written in "textbook" form.

I feel that LeMasters has expertise around family analysis, and that he did set out to accomplish what he intended in the writing of his book--it was written for textbook purposes. I do not feel it is particularly useful for the single parent regarding social issues, psychological issues--it is simply too brief and general in this particular area, but it is a good historical documentation of family systems.

P Mindley, C. The divorced mother. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co., 1969.

The author, a remarried divorcee (remarried after 6 years) with two children, offers practical information for the reader regarding adjustment to divorce, divorce and law, psychotherapy (an excellent chapter in my opinion), considerations regarding options to divorce reactions of children to divorce, working mothers, finances (consider the date the book was written--double the figures and they will be more accurate for 1977), etc. The book is entertaining, and beneficial, but I question the reliability of the research involved (or if indeed there was any substantial research). The tone, however, is positive, lacking hostility and self-pity. The emphasis is on self-actualization, and ways to obtain this.

She does contradict herself quite often, for example, stating that divorce is harder on women than men, then metnioning the higher suicide rates among men following divorce than among women. She also has some very "stereotypical" statements which appear to be undocumented or researched in any fashion, for example, in her discussion of serious problems of children in broken homes, she mentions (you guessed it) homosexuality among male children as being the greatest threat.

Obviously the book is not aimed at the "sophisticated/intellectual" reader, but I feel that the positive, rather entertaining approach could be very beneficial to the recently-single parent.

P Moultine, S. Making it as a divorced mother. McCalls, August 1976, p. 92.

"Routine" account by the author of her marriage and subsequent divorce. The author recalls her marriage in her junior year of college, her years of putting her husband through school, and then having a child.

After the graduation of her husband they found they had little in common, and divorce was the result. She then tells of her difficulties when she returned to finish her education, the financial strain of paying off school loans, and the necessity of her turning down the one teaching position that was offered to her because day care was not available for her child.

She currently is working, but is too tired for any social life, and worries about the influence that her single life style may have on her child.

The entire account was negative, presented no possible coping mechanisms.

However, she did end her article with one positive statement: "I am a worthwhile person contributing something worthwhile to this world. Judge me for myself, for what I can accomplish, not for what others have accomplished for me."

It is a shame that the author did not, somewhere in her account of her situation as a single parent, state how she arrived at such a positive statement regarding her self-concept.

P Taves, I. Women alone. New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1968.

The focus of Isabella Taves' book can be summarized by her epilogue entitled "Happiness is Not a Goal"--an epilogue in which she states that "Security depends not as much upon how much you have, as upon how much you can do without (p. 314)."

Her book is comprised of statements she received from women who are alone (by reasons of widowhood, divorce, choice, etc.) whom she questioned upon her travels throughout America, the Far East, South America, and Europe. She questioned their reactions to their new lifestyle, adjustments made in their moral code, the manner in which they cope with children and prospective husbands, where they find men, jobs, and finances. It is difficult, until the epilogue, to determine the author's personal stance as opposed to the opinions of those she questions. The epilogue, which I mentioned, does however, in my opinion, make her stance clear, and is reinforced by those responses from other women alone which she chose to include in her book.

In the prologue, the 49 question survey which Taves used in her interviews is presented. The questionnaire itself leaves little room for optimistic responses, and emphasizes what she apparently feels to be the primary issues of pain in the life of the woman alone--those of being without a man and the difficulties involved, and particularly the difficult task of finding another man to fulfill wants, desires, and needs.

I found the book to be very negative and narrow in its approach as regards any possibility for happiness derived from a life alone (or more precisely, without a husband). The book was overly sympathetic to the plight of the woman alone and in no way offered "permission" for the woman to accept and identify herself, and make choices regarding the quality of her new lifestyle.

P Salk, Dr. L. Guilt and the single parent. Harpers Bazaar, March 1976, pp. 89, 53, 128.

Dr. Salk discusses guilt related to single-parenting, the working single parent, adoption, and remarriage, in a very opinionated article; it presents no data to substantiate his opinions, but treats them as absolutes.

Dr. Salk states that parental guilt can be an indicator that something is wrong in the parent/child relationships. He believes the question of primary concern for the parent should be that of whether or not the needs of the child are being met, and states that many parents are not meeting their child's need adequately. He emphasizes that the question for the parent should NOT be how he/she deals with his/her feeling of guilt--but should question the needs of the child.

The article emphasizes that regardless of how busy you as a parent are, it is of primary importance to bring your children into your life--a situation which the author feels that most single parents just haven't given enough thought to. Children should be included in daily tasks, as well as in a single parent's social life--a possibility which parents will not find so difficult if they would just take a "fresh look at the way they live". Salk does not mention that parents may sometimes benefit from time away from their children, but rather seems appauled by the very idea.

As regards a single parent working, Salk believes that it CAN work out, but that most parents are far too careless when it comes to selecting a person or agency to care for their child/children. He also states that a flexible working schedule, so the parent can be home when children are home, is ESSENTIAL, and after all: "Many people have to carry work home anyway, and they can do it after their children are asleep."

I find Salk's article to be insensitive, ignorant regarding facts, naive regarding situations, totally child-centered, and totally unhelpful for the single parent--in fact, I find it extremely guilt inducing.

P Schlesinger, B. The one parent family. Canada: University of Toronto Press, 1969.

Schlesinger discusses the fact that the problem of the single parent today is directly related to the fact that "...society is dominated by the idea of the nuclear family (p. 3)."

The book contains a study of single parenthood by Jetse Sprey, as well as a study of widowhood by Felix M. Berardo.

Schlesinger defines the one-parent family, remarriage, and provides annotated bibliographies related to his topic.

Sprey discusses single parenthood from two perspectives: (a) The absence of one parent in a family system and the role obligations that

remaining parent is forced to assume; and (b) the single-parent structure as seen by society--a minority system--and the consequences thereof.

One parent families discussed in the book are (and these the author has ranked in order of acceptance of society):

1. Widowhood
2. Divorced
3. Separated
4. Unmarried

The authors do not take a strong stance for or against the single-parent families as viable institutions. Rather, they feel that comparisons (as opposed to being between "intact" and "single" families) should be made within the single-parent system alone, in order to be useful. In other words, whether or not the single-parent family is viable depends upon many viables within that system--just as does the "intact" nuclear family.

The book is informational, and provides many references related to the topic which are useful. The presentation is neither positive or negative, but attempts to be objective.

I question whether or not the book is useful for remaining single parents--unless they are willing to do further reading based on the extensive bibliography. The book is useful as a "text"--philosophical it is not, information, and rather bias-free it is.

P The Committee on Public Education, Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry. The joys and sorrows and parenthood. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1973.

The book is a rather "global" one dealing with personal development, expectations, and many other general topics related to parenthood. The authors devote six pages to the topic: On Being a Single Parent.

These six pages provide important information for the single parent. The book discusses the self-image of the parent in custody, the necessity of psychological as well as physical separation on the behalf of the remaining parent--and the related feelings of anger, remorse, guilt, retaliation, and sorrow that can keep an emotional relationship going even after the parents have ceased to live with each other--as well as the difficulty psychologically this aspect may present for the children.

The authors also discuss the fact that children may often blame themselves for the separation of their parents, if they belittle or downgrade each other to the children. Children need to know why their parents separated, to be reassured that it was not their fault, and also to know what originally attracted their parents to each other (in other words, be reassured that there are qualities which are very positive regarding the absent parent).

The authors discuss loneliness as a major problem for single parents, due to isolation in society, indicating that fatigue and a feeling of helplessness often add to the distress and loneliness. The authors emphasize the importance of parents having a life that is apart

from their childrens'--as well as one which includes the children.

Social contact, seeking information regarding social and educational opportunities, counseling, and/or therapy is advised, especially when the parent is having difficulty defining and/or re-defining himself/herself as a human being.

P Women in Transition, Inc., Editors. Women in transition--A feminist handbook on separation and divorce. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1975.

This recent, 538-page book provides information regarding every aspect of separation, divorce, and/or single parenthood imaginable. Women in Transition is a resource program providing survival and emotional support to women in this period of transition--skills and supports which are aimed at helping women realize their potential as independent people.

It is positive, yet realistic, informational, as well as supportive emotionally, and is aimed at readers of all "classes"--in other words, the authors recognize that some women are in a situation in which they are primarily concerned with basic survival needs, and others whose basic survival need may not be in jeopardy, and are more able to concentrate on emotional instability...the needs and wants of women in all circumstances are considered.

In general, the areas covered are as follows: the purpose and history of the Women in Transition organization: emotional support necessary and how to go about obtaining it (personal and professional): issues regarding children in the transition period (feelings and legal matters); all legal aspects of separation, divorce, common-law marriages; financial aspects, including welfare, work, education, insurance, etc.; living space options, including rentals, ownership, public housing, group living; an excellent chapter entitled "Taking Care of Ourselves" which includes health (mental and physical), beatings, rape, self-defense; and finally a section providing advice for those who wish to start their own program for women in transition.

Also included, in the appendix, listed by state, are women's centers, clinics, groups, etc. I was disappointed to find only one listing for Wisconsin, that of the Women's Crisis Line and Coalition Center in Milwaukee.

A bibliography, in most cases annotated, is also included at the end of the book.

P Yates, M. Coping, a survival manual for women alone. New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1976.

The author, Martha Yates, is a widow whose husband died in 1970. Consequently, she addresses her book primarily to those women who are alone as a result of the death of a husband.

Ms. Yates does however, discuss coping with divorce, with children; and other related issues, such as finances, work, repairs, and maintenance, sex, income tax, etc.

The author takes the stance that the lack of companionship sums up

most of the problems facing the woman alone, whether by divorce, a death, choice, etc.

She believes that all women, when faced with aloneness, will have to adapt to drastic changes in lifestyle, status, and finances, and that she must guard against being victimized by the problems that confront her. Consequently, her book is primarily "informational"; she discusses such items as wells, trusts, insurance, credit, alimony, child support, divorce insurance, social security benefits, investments, budgeting, bill paying, housing (whether to buy, sell, rent), as well as many other "technical" problems that may face the woman alone.

Martha Yates does discuss psychological issues confronting the woman alone, but she does so briefly, and, in keeping with the rest of her book, in a rather informational style (for example, addresses of counseling facilities, etc.).

Her book tends to be positive, as well as informational. I think it is a useful book for anyone who is alone. If the reader is looking for a book which focuses primarily on psychological issues, this book is not one of the more useful, but the information offered is certainly information that most women do not have when they are suddenly faced with life alone--consequently she does often find herself victimized by the "system" due to insufficient information; information regarding areas that were probably handled by the man in her life.

P Young, L. The fractured family. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1973.

The author originally intended to write a book about grandparents--about the benefits of the extended family, and about the changes that have taken place which have brought about the isolation of the nuclear family, particularly related to the involved elderly.

Her premise is that grandparents (defined as "people with a past") have a great deal to offer younger people, but that the emphasis in American society is on independence--an emphasis which is alienating the young and the old. As a result, she feels, we have lost the concept of family closeness, and have "...created a world where there isn't must place for those enduring, binding, relationships, and suddenly we can't find out way in it (p. 17)."

Chapter 7 is entitled "Life Without Father". Young is primarily talking about the psychological absence of father in today's families. She defines a "father" as someone who "rides herd" on the kids, and believes that in today's modern world (due to father's ambition in the work force) he has little opportunity to be that "authoritative" figure (a fact which Young finds distressing). She states that "...children need fathers, and society needs the principle of fatherhood (pp. 73-74)". This "principle" is related to father as the figure of authority in the family system.

Chapter 8 is entitled "What Happened to Mother". Again Young is fearful around changes taking place in the family because "If Father once symbolized power, authority, and responsibility, Mother was the symbol of love, nurture, and gentleness (p. 75)." For obvious reasons Young sees this definition of parental roles as changing, and in her opinion this is a negative change.

Consequently "With the loss of father as teacher, power, and protector, we have seen the premise of authority challenged and the strength of responsibility frayed. With the weakening of mother as teacher, refuge, and giver of tenderness, we are seeing perponal concern, loyalty, and trust diminished and corrupted (p. 87)."

Young does not address families where the father is physically absent from the family, but does emphasize the need for the two-role traditional family system. Her emphasis on the importance of these roles being played by the "appropriate" parent (i.e., father as authoritarian, mother as nurturer) leads me to believe that she would greatly question whether or not a family is "functional" and "healthy" if these roles are not played appropriately, or if one role model is absent from the system.

IV. GENERAL FAMILY THEORY

Ventura 230

Cranley

2 Ackerman, N. W. The psychodynamics of family life. New York: Basic Books,
25, Inc., 1958.
7

This book is an attempt to understand individual health and illness in the conceptual framework of the psychological content of the individual's family. Discussion of the father's role is scattered throughout the discussions of theory, clinical application, and therapeutic intervention.

Reading this book one gets the feeling that the author is trying very hard to come to an acceptance of the more "modern" concept of the male being just as able to nurture as the female, however, in his heart-of-hearts he still sees men purely in the instrumental role. In his theory section he discusses the concept of biological roots for a "basic family feeling epitomized in maternal behavior but shared by the father and also the older child who gives parental care to a younger sibling." He views the man's protection of his mate as a form of maternal behavior. However, after setting the stage for a nurturant father, he goes on to say that the father is not important to the infant, but rather is instrumental later on in preparing the child for contact beyond the family because the child's interaction with his father epitomizes his earliest separation from the mother and his first adaption to a stranger. Most of the discussion of father throughout the book relates to pathology. He sees men as only having children as an extension of themselves and feels that most men father not out of true feelings, but for "glory". He never gives a picture of a good loving father. The father is discussed as the one who trains his son for a masculine role in society but no mention is made of his relation with his daughter. Thus while the author spends many pages saying that there is a biological basis for fathering and not just a social basis, he describes the father role in a stereotypic social way. He offers no data for the concept of biological basis and in fact emphasizes that a man can be a parent without knowing it whereas a woman always knows when she is a parent.

T Benedek, T. Fatherhood and providing. In J. Anthony & T. Benedek (Eds.), Parenthood: Its psychology and psychopathology. Boston: Little Brown and Company, 1970.

Benedek, a psychiatrist, supports the psychoanalytic approach in proposing the hypothesis that fatherhood has instinctual roots beyond the mating behavior drive. This includes the function as provider to develop fatherhood ties which make his relationship with his children a mutual developmental experience.

She states that the biological root of fatherh-od is the instinctual drive for survival (p. 170). The male's desire to survive in the child of his own sex is documented by rites, religions, customs, and socio-economics. There is a difference in the psycho-dynamics of males and females which correlates to the reproductive function. Two conflicts of fatherliness are the father's identification with his child and his own identity with his own father.

This is an interesting presentation which expands Mead's idea of biological roots and Parson's model of instrumental and expressive roles

of father and mother.

2 Biller, H., & Meredith, D. Father and the newborn. In H. Biller & D.
23, Meredith (Eds.), Father power. New York: McKay Co., Inc., 1975.
25, Discussion on the level of and to the lay father concerning
7 events and expectations usually encountered during the first year of life with a new infant. Subjects addressed ranged from ingrained societal expectations according to sex of the infant to necessary changes in interpersonal relationships within the family as well as with social acquaintances. Emphasized was the advantages to the infant because of the presence of a participating father. Items delineated as advantageous included: provision of a contrasting personality or model, an increased tendency for exploration of the environment, a decrease in anxiety experienced upon separation from the parents or an increased acceptance of strangers, and enhancement of quality mothering indirectly due to paternal support.

Interestingly presentation and encouragement for father involvement. The style of largely popular reading with brief and occasional references to research supportive of the authors' views and biases.

E Birren, J. E. Principles of research on aging. Appendix A. In Neugarten (Ed.), Middle age and aging. Chicago: University of Chicago Press. Pp. 545-551.

This is a useful article since it presents ways of studying the aging process in research. The author includes types of studies like longevity; age differences from biological, psychological, and social characteristics; research dealing with characteristic events or sequences; and the historical aspects of the individual or group.

He stresses research design with present methods of study involving cross-sectional or longitudinal studies. This writing is valuable to anyone attempting research on aging or developmental stages in the life cycle.

T Bronfenbrenner, U. The changing American child--A speculative analysis. Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 1961, 7(2), 73-84.

Discussion of possible changes in personality developments of children today due to the changing patterns of child-rearing. Changes noted include: (1) greater permissiveness toward the child's spontaneous desires; (2) freer expression of affection; (3) increased reliance on indirect "psychological" techniques of discipline; and (4) in consequence of the above shifts in the direction of what are predominantly middle-class techniques and values, a narrowing of the gap between social classes in their patterns of child-rearing. In essence, the father is becoming increasingly more affectionate and less authoritarian and the mother is becoming relatively more important as the agent of discipline, especially for boys. The result of such patterns seems to be self-control, achievement-orientation, leadership, popularity and adjustment in general for the child. However, to be considered is the idea that girls are apparently especially susceptible to the detrimental influence of over-protection; boys, to the ill effects of insu-ficient parental discipline

and support. Also greater salience of the parent of the same sex.

Study, longitudinal in type, is needed to verify the proposed effects.

T 11 Cone, T. E. The importance of fathers in the rearing of children--two Eighteenth Century views. Pediatrics, 1972, 49, 915.

Quotations of two eighteenth century physicians, Dr. William Buchan (1729-1805) and Dr. C. August Struve (1767-1807), who considered the father important in child rearing from infancy. The ideas proposed were or are in sharp contrast to the common child-rearing policy of the time which was largely the domain of women.

T E,C Erikson, E. Children and society. Revised edition. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 1963.

Erikson, E. Identity, youth, and crisis. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 1963.

Erikson uses Freud's psychoanalytic theory to define human development across the life span. He identifies eight phases based on ego stage theory. Each presents a new challenge in life which must be successfully negotiated.

Three stages specific for the period when the male usually becomes a father: Stage V, Identity vs. Identity Confusion; Stage VI, Intimacy vs. Isolation; and Stage VII, Generativity vs. Stagnation.

Erikson's theoretical model enlarges psychoanalytic theory. It is difficult to test empirically but it is useful clinically in providing insights into understanding the issues and changes which occur in adulthood.

P Firestone, R. (Ed.) A book of men, visions of the male experience. New York: Stonehill Publishing Company, 1975.

Selection of writing of a personal reflective nature arranged under four headings: sons, lovers, husbands, fathers. Authors range from Jung to Joe Namath.

P Gilder, G. F. Sexual suicide. New York: Quadrangle, 1973.

This book is an essay on social philosophy dealing with sexuality in its broadest sense and with roles of males and females in contemporary society. It contains a bibliography from widely diverse fields.

In many ways it could be characterized as a response to the feminist movement. Certainly it provides a provocative counterpoint to the popular feminist position. In several chapters Gilder debates directly such authors as Greer and Friedan.

Written in a highly readable style, this book is a valuable exposition of another point of view in the battle of the sexes.

C Gould, R. The phases of adult life: A study in developmental psychology. The American Journal of Psychiatry, Nov. 1972, 129(5), 521-531.

Gould, a psychiatrist, believes adulthood has been conceptually ignored in psychiatric literature as a developmental period. He describes two studies which examine the way time influences the actual experiences of the adult across a lifetime.

This work is descriptive. Gould intended it to generate hypotheses. He includes a literature review of theories of aging. Methodology of the study used seven groups of age range differences. A control group of the same age groups was used with observations made at the end of six months. The experimental group was interviewed with tape recordings which were analyzed by participant observers. The professional observers' data was rechecked by using first year medical students. The same central characteristics of aging were determined by both sets of observers.

Although this paper is not specific to the male aging process, it is similar to findings discussed in Levinson's work with young and middle adult males.

T 7 Hacker, H. M. The new burdens of masculinity. Marriage and Family Living, 1957, 19, 227-233.

Discussion of hypothesis that men suffer from the lack of a generally accepted, clearly defined pattern of behavior expected of them and that their interpretation of the masculine role varies according to individual personality needs and social situations. The author views the contemporary masculine problems as arising from three sources: (1) requirements for success in the breadwinner role are increasing; (2) feelings of inadequacy in fulfilling role expectations due to ambiguity or confusion regarding role expectations; and (3) accommodation to the new freedoms and responsibilities of women. But perhaps in summary, the greatest burden our culture imposes on men is that any confession of doubts or sign of weakness is taken for effeminacy.

The author calls for research designed to uncover how men today interpret the masculine role and the effect of the tensions imposed by society. It is of interest theoretically to know in what directions masculine roles are changing and how men are handling these changes.

E 7 Heath, D. H. Competent fathers: Their personalities and marriages. Human Development, 1976, 19, 26-39.

Report of study focusing on two evaluative meanings of competence in fathering, self-attitude and wife's ratings, as assessed by a longitudinal study of highly educated fathers. Assessed in the study were adolescent personality and adult maturity and competence and quality of marital relations associated with paternal competence. Paternal competence was found to be directly related to adolescent psychological adjustment and adult maturity and psychological health, a wide range of other adult competencies, and marital characteristics like happiness, adequacy of communication, sexual compatibility, and the competence of the wife as a mother.

Complicating factors or problems in any such study include criteria to define "effectiveness" or "competence". The criteria may indeed vary over time or from region or culture to another. Further, in defining the criteria, the judges biases may enter. As a result, generalizability may be questioned.

T 25, 7 Hines, J. D. Father...the forgotten man. Nursing Forum, 1971, 10(2), 176-200.

In this article the author, who is a nurse, gives a brief review of the traditional, contemporary, and disciplinarian role of the father. She also discusses the mass media and idealized image of the father in our culture. The main points of the article are then brought out in the section on Fatherliness vs. Motherliness. She feels that there are biological roots for behavior which is in reality neither a masculine nor a feminine, but rather, a human characteristic. She talks about a "family emotion which may be expressed by man or child as well as expressed by women." On the other hand, she feels that the "culturally learned part of fatherhood is the repression of spontaneous feelings of tenderness and love, and that these feelings do exist in men toward their babies." She supports this position by the observation that men, in an accepting environment where they are allowed, psychologically and physically, to participate in pregnancy, labor, and delivery and child care do indeed express deep feelings for the baby. Implications are then drawn for future research and for nursing practice.

While this article has many valid points, it is weakened by the author's reliance on mainly theoretical references. There were several good research studies done by this time on father-infant interactions at delivery which do lend support to her thesis and should have been presented by her.

T 25, 7 Howells, J. G. Fallacies in child care: Part 2. That fathering is unimportant. Acta Paedopsychiatrica, 1970, 37, 46-55.

Howells' main point is that "fathering is an element in family life as significant as mothering". He feels that there are many similarities and few differences between mothering and fathering. The important thing to the child is not who offers the care, but that care is given. "Parenting is more important than the parent." He supports these assertions with examples of paternal care in the animal kingdom. Anthropological support is offered in the form of a discussion of the Arapesh culture in which the father plays an equal part with the mother during pregnancy, and the culture of the island of Manus in the Admiralty Islands where the father is the dominant, tender loving parent. In his section on fathering in contemporary society, he reviews several research studies which conclude that fathers do indeed take an active part in parenting.

Although Howells states over and over that it doesn't matter who does the parenting, he actually ofers no data on the effects of fathering vs. mothering on children. He merely states that male animals do

parent. Males in other cultures do take the dominant parent role and some men in our culture care for children. Thus the data offered do not really speak to his thesis.

E 25, 11 Itani, J. Paternal care in the wild Japanese monkey, Macaca fuscata. In C. H. Southwick (Ed.), Primate social behavior. Princeton, NJ: D Van Nostrand Company, Inc., 1963.

This article reports on the author's field observations of "paternal" behavior in Macaca fuscata. He does warn that "paternal behavior" is somewhat of a misnomer since it is impossible within a troop society to trace the blood relationship between father and child. He also brings up the point that on the part of the infant monkey there can be no cognition of "father". However the behavior exhibited does fit the term "paternal care" and is quite similar to the behavior of a mother toward her infant except for the lack of suckling.

In this troop paternal behavior consisted of protection of the one and two year old infants by the adult males of high rank during the delivery season. Since the mothers have to let their infants born the previous year go away from them on account of delivery, the males take over the care of the infants. There is no sex differentiation in the care of one year infants but the two year infants being cared for by males seemed to be predominantly female and/or undergrown or weak individuals. Itani feels this was mainly due to the tendency of males toward peripheralization and females toward staying in the central part to the troop rather than any preference for female infants by adult males.

Itani noted that an adult male protecting an infant "usually becomes much milder and behaves as if femininity were strengthened in him." However, he did observe a few males who become even more aggressive than usual while protecting an infant.

Unfortunately, this article gives only conclusions of the study without mention of study design so it is impossible to judge validity.

E 25, 7 Josselyn, I. M. Cultural forces, motherliness and fatherliness. American Journal of Orthopsychiatry, 1956, 26, 264-271.

In this theoretical article the author asserts that the feelings and experiences involved in mothering are not a characteristic of women alone, but rather comprise a human characteristic which can be expressed by all people in many situations among which parenting is only one.

After stating that fatherliness is indeed a component of the mature male psychology, the author goes on to review the emotional experiences men have which tend to distort and cripple their responses. Childhood is dominated by women. Young boys have few male figures available in their day-to-day life. Thus, in order to identify as male they must deny nurturing feelings which are identified as female. Thus when mature the male must escape to the outside male dominated world to avoid the implications of identification with feminine characteristics. The acceptance of fatherliness exposes men to symbolic castration via the "mother's little helper" syndrome. The man is allowed to express feelings

of tenderness only under the guise of helping (thus resembling) a mother. Men are away from home a great deal and when home they are expected to "play" with the kids thus reducing their role to plaything. Finally, in our society men are generally considered to be lacking in the necessary knowledge to be a wise parent. All of these factors combine to make the role of men in the family structure boring and depreciating and men, being frustrated and dissatisfied with their expression in the home, will continue "to seek release by directing their available free energy into channels in which they can feel more adequate, with a resultant over-investment in the gratification they attain from activities away from the home." Thus the author appears to be saying that there is indeed a biological basis for fathering as well as mothering, but our culture has forced repression of the response to this trait.

This was a pretyy advanced theory for the time and the author offers no real data to support it mainly due to the lack of research done at this time. This article certainly brings to mind implications for research especially in the area of comparing men of this time with the adult male 10 years from now since more children are now being raised in less female dominated environments.

E, C Kimmel, D. C. Adulthood and aging: An interdisciplinary, developmental view. New York: John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 1974.

Kimmel uses the developmental approach as a framework for viewing male and female young adulthood. He attempts to link interdisciplinary concepts of psychology, sociology, and physiology. He presents six case study examples to support his ideas, and to give the reader a perspective of the roles, tasks, and skills of this age group, specific to the U.S.A.

Kimmel was a student of Neugarten. He provides an extensive bibliography from multi-disciplines which deals with the aging process. He has included studies and discussions of pitfalls in research in aging including cross sectional vs. longitudinal studies. He stresses the importance of this age period and its need for good research.

C LeShan, E. The wonderful crisis of middle age. New York: Warner Paperback Library, 1974.

The author has an enjoyable style of writing. She uses her own life experiences and her background in family guidance to assist people in understanding the process of aging. It is a useful book for clinicians dealing with clients entering this age group.

T, C Levinson, D. J., Darrow, C. M., Klein, E. B., Levinson, M. H., & McKee, B. The psychological development of men in early adulthood and the mid-life transition. New Haven: Yale University, 1974.

This paper describes a four-year project in which the authors attempt to build a theory of adult male development during years 20 to 45. Sage I: Boundary between family of origin and fully adult world; Stage II: Getting into the adult world (early 20's to ages 27 to 29 years;

Stage III: Transition period (ages 28 to 32 years); Stave IV: Steeling down (early 30's or 40's); Stage V: Becoming one's own man (ages 35 to 39 years); Stave VI: Ego stage of generativity vs. stagnation (ages 39 to 42); Stage VII: Goodness of fit between life structure and self (mid-life transition); Stage VIII: Beginning of middle adulthood.

Levinson et al., are in the process of theory building. No research methodology is discussed. It is assumed that a case study approach is used.

Little writing or research has been done on this aspect of maleness. This paper has credibility for generating hypotheses. It will need operational definitions; statistical design and replication. However, it has proved useful for a clinical framework or reference.

E T Mead, M. Male and female: A study of the sexes in a changing world. New York: Morrow, 1949.

Background and bibliographical material in seven Pacific Island cultures are included as well as experiences in American culture.

Mean argues that males are necessary only for the conception of children and that all other fathering behaviors are culturally defined. The way in which a society defines the male role determines to a major extent the kind of society that will exist. This is the classic work on sex roles. It has formed the basis for much of the work which follows.

T 7 Mogey, J. M. A century of declining paternal authority. Marriage and Family Living, 1957, 19, 234-239.

Discussion of the role of the father in the family. The central theme is that in the nuclear family, participation by the father counts for more towards family stability than a strict legal, traditional type of authority behavior. The role of the father appears to be changing towards greater participation of the man in all the tasks of the household. And there is a tendency to recognize the equalitarian family based on companionship.

Evidence of stability of the family in the light of the formerly mentioned changes were given as: increased marriage rate during the past generation in all countries of the West, and a decline in the divorce rate.

The article is dated and the conclusions reached are questionable for the society of the late '70's.

T E Neugarten, B. (Ed.) Middle age and aging. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1968.

Neugarten is a gerontologist who examines the aging process particularly middle and older adulthood. Her book includes authors from fields of sociology, psychology, medicine, and anthropology. She includes a discussion of current theoretical frameworks like disengagement, role changes, and interactional theory. She relates aging in a

istorical and cultural perspective.

The book emphasizes roles, age-specific behaviors; psychological aspects of the life cycle; the social psychology of health; family relationships; work, leisure retirement, social environment; aging in other societies; and death and dying.

Neugarten's book is a classic since so little is written dealing with studies on aging. The research strategies are applicable across the life span. She points out the need for better theory construct, research design, and implementation.

Nydegger, C. N. Timing of fatherhood: Role perception and socialization. Pennsylvania State University: Dissertation (February) vol. 34 (8-A, Part 2), 1974. Pp. 5355-5356.

Unable to obtain this dissertation abstract in time for this presentation. It is relative to this subject area and should be investigated.

C Pearson, M. Middle aged male crisis. Medical aspects of human sexuality, August 1968, (8), 6-13.

This is an excellent discussion of the middle aged crises in men which includes a literature review and clinical interventions. Although the article is nine years old it has relevance to present day practice.

P Pleck, J. H., & Sawyer, J. (Eds.) Men and masculinity. New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1974.

A series of essays written by men dealing with feelings on becoming male in the U.S.A. It is a currently popular book in sensitizing males who are questioning the learned role of masculinity.

P Sheehy, G. Passages: Predictable crises of adult life. New York: Dutton, 1975.

A compilation of the author's ideas, condensation of theories of aging, and interviews with young and middle aged adults. It is currently a popular best seller. The book is geared to the professional middle class male and female.

See Page

Yarrow, M. Problems of method in parent-child research. Child Development, 1963, 34, 215-236. 37

Wallach, M. A. Creativity. In P. Mussen (Ed.), Carmichael's manual of child psychology, 1970. Pp. 1211-1272. 44

Staples, R. Toward a sociology of the black family: A theoretical and methodological assessment. Journal of Marriage and the Family, February 1971, 119-138. 102

Tenhausen, W. The black family: Myth and reality. Psychiatry, May 1970, 33, 145-173. 104

Whittington, J. Some approaches to Afro-American family structure. Journal of Social and Behavioral Science, 1972, 19, 18-37. 106

Brandwein, R. A., Brown, C. A., & Fox, E. M. Women and children last: The social situation of divorced mothers and their families. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 1974, 36, 498-514. 163

Herzog, E., & Sudia, C. Children in fatherless families. in B. M. Caldwell & H. N. Ricciuti (Eds.), Review of child developmental research (Volume 3). Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1973. Pp. 141-232. 171